



3981

Mr. [illegible]

2050

for [illegible]











FRONTISPIECE  
TO  
SHAKSPEARE'S COMEDIES

C. Gould del.

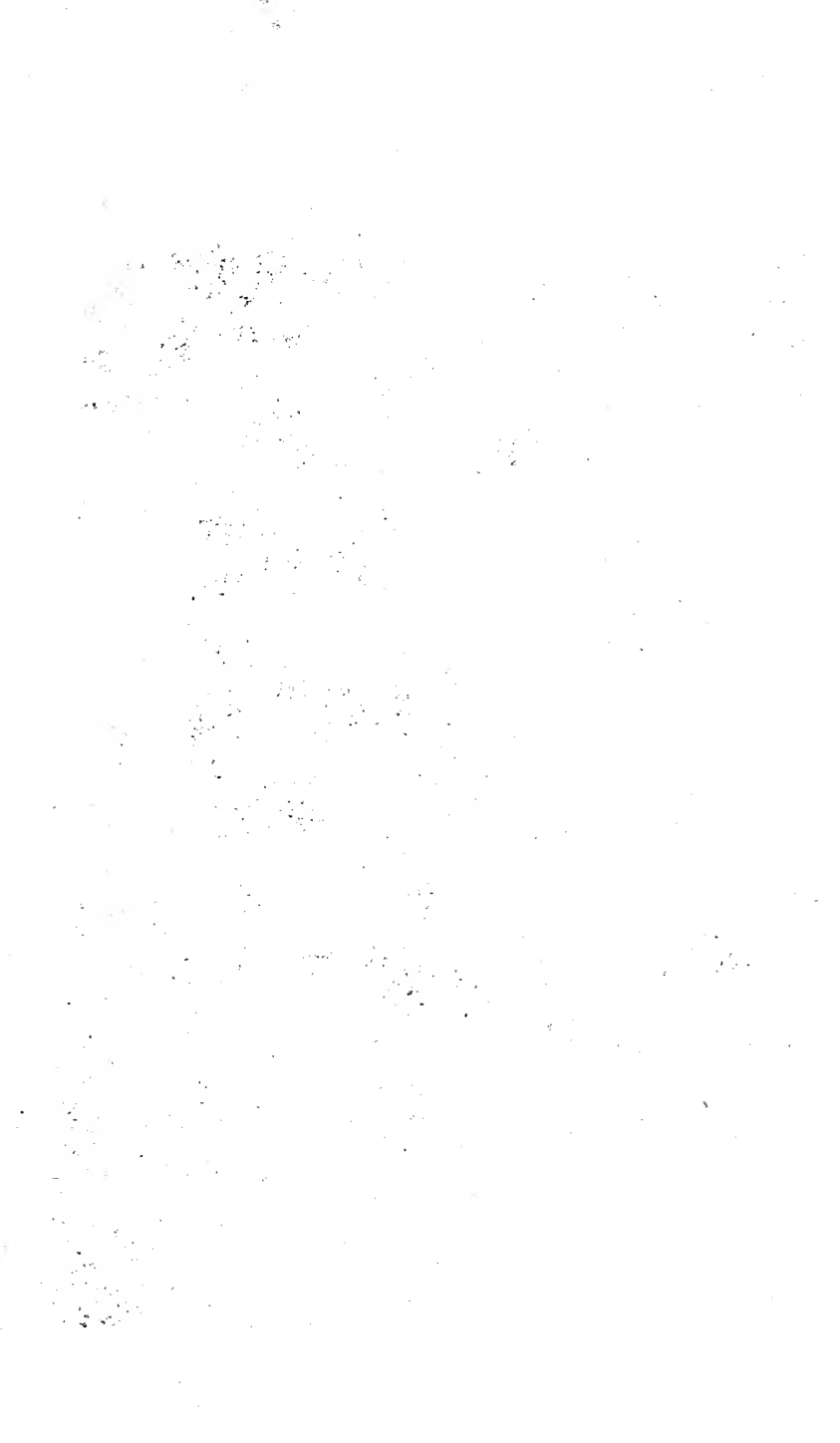
J. Rogers sculp.

Published as the Act directs by P. Collier & Co. New York.



*Printed and sold by the Author, by Ballou & Roberts, Jan 1. 1791.*







SHAKSPEARE.

*Engraved by W. & J. Walker.*

*Published as the act directs by Bellamy & Roberts Nov. 1780.*

THE  
P L A Y S  
OF  
**William Shakspeare,**  
COMPLETE,  
IN EIGHT VOLUMES.

---

VOLUME I.

CONTAINING

THE LIFE OF SHAKSPEARE,  
AS YOU LIKE IT,  
TEMPEST,  
WINTER'S TALE,  
TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA,

---

THE ENGRAVINGS TO THIS VOLUME ARE,  
A HEAD OF SHAKSPEARE, TWO SCENES TO EACH PLAY,  
AND TWO ALLEGORIES.

---

A L L E G O R I E S.

1. THE COMIC MUSE DICTATING TO SHAKSPEARE, AND FANCY STREWING FLOWERS OVER HIS PRODUCTIONS.
  2. SHAKSPEARE'S COMIC CHARACTERS PERSONIFIED BY INFANTS.
- 

L O N D O N:

PRINTED FOR BELLAMY AND ROBARTS,  
No. 138, FLEET-STREET, AND AT No. 4, PETERBOROUGH-  
COURT, FLEET-STREET.

1796.

Shaksp

PR

2752

.B42

1796

v. 1



---

T H E  
L I F E

O F

WILLIAM SHAKSPEARE.

---



---

THE  
L I F E  
O F  
WILLIAM SHAKSPEARE.

---

**T**WO centuries have past, and the third is journeying on, since light and life was given to a genius whose course, although confined considerably within the scriptural term of mortal existence, was marked with a brilliancy which will retain its lustre so long as nature shall charm, sense shall refine, and feeling shall engage the heart which dwells, with fondness on the excellencies of mortal composition.

To err is human, and thanks to the numerous pens which have been employed on the merits and

## LIFE OF SHAKSPEARE.

defects of WILLIAM SHAKSPEARE, the latter have been fully set forth to public view. But of the former, like a rich mine whose stores are unexhaustable, many veins yet remain untouched, and which is still left to be explored by future critics. WILLIAM SHAKSPEARE, upon whose labours we have formed EIGHT VOLUMES, unclogged with interruptions, ungrateful to those who read him “for himself alone,” was born in the year 1564; his father, Mr. JOHN SHAKSPEARE, was a dealer in wool, and in his way a man of eminence. The profits arising from his business, however, were not found to be more than adequate to the support of ten children, of which our WILLIAM was the eldest. It was the desire of his father to bestow on his first-born a liberal education, but what his wishes aimed at, his fortune denied; as a prudent man therefore he led his son's studies to the sheep's fleecy produce, rather than to the mysteries of the scholar's page.

It is not to be supposed that a mind, fraught with the golden stores of imagination, would suffer itself to be long involved in the mists of ignorance. Books and men became in their turns the objects of his attention, and without entering into the

too much trodden path of conjecture, to what degree of learning he might have attained, it is fully evident from the noble monument he has raised, to illustrate and dignify his memory, that he was more indebted to the endowments of nature, than to the acquisitions of art.

“ I cannot affirm, (says Theobald) with any certainty, how long his father lived ; but I take him to be the same Mr. JOHN SHAKSPEARE who was living in the year 1599, and who then, in honour of his son, took out an extract of his family-arms from the herald’s office ; by which it appears, that he had been officer and bailiff of Stratford-upon-Avon, in Warwickshire ; and that he enjoyed some hereditary lands and tenements, the reward of his great grandfather’s faithful and approved service to king Henry VII.

“ Be this as it will, our SHAKSPEARE, it seems, was bred for some time at a free-school ; the very free-school, I presume, founded at Stratford : where, we are told, he acquired what Latin he was master of : but that his father being obliged, through narrowness of circumstance, to withdraw him too soon from thence, he was thereby unhap-

pily prevented from making any proficiency in the dead languages.

“ How long he continued in his father’s way of business, either as an assistant to him, or on his own proper account, no notices are left to inform us: nor have I been able to learn precisely at what period of life he quitted his native Stratford, and began his acquaintance with London and the  
STAGE.

“ Whether the force of inclination merely, or some concurring circumstances of convenience in the match, prompted him to marry so early, is not easy to be determined at this distance; but, it is probable, a view of interest might partly sway his conduct in this point: for he married the daughter of one Hathaway, a substantial yeoman in his neighbourhood, and she had the start of him in age no less than eight years. She survived him, notwithstanding, seven seasons, and died that very year in which the *players* published the first edition of his works in *folio*, Anno Dom. 1623, at the age of 67 years, as we likewise learn from her monument in Stratford church.

“ How

“ How long he continued in this kind of settlement, upon his own native spot, is not more easily to be determined. But if the tradition be true, of that extravagance which forced him both to quit his country and way of living, to wit, his being engaged, with a knot of young deer-stealers, to rob the park of Sir Thomas Lucy, of Cherlecot, near Stratford, the enterprize favours so much of youth and levity, we may reasonably suppose it was before he could write full man. Besides, considering he has left us six-and-thirty plays at least, avowed to be genuine; and considering too that he had retired from the stage, to spend the latter part of his days at his own native Stratford; the interval of time necessarily required for the finishing so many dramattick pieces, obliges us to suppose he threw himself very early upon the playhouse. And as he could, probably, contract no acquaintance with the drama, while he was driving on the affair of wool at home; some time must be lost, even after he had commenced player, before he could attain knowledge enough in the science to qualify himself for turning author.

“ It has been observed by Mr. Rowe, that, amongst other extravagances, which our author has given to his Sir John Falstaff, in *The Merry Wives*

of *Windsor*, he has made him a deer-stealer ; and, that he might at the same time remember his Warwickshire prosecutor, under the name of Justice Shallow, he has given him very near the same coat of arms, which Dugdale, in his *Antiquities* of that county, describes for a family there. There are two coats, I observe, in Dugdale, where three silver fishes are borne in the name of Lucy ; and another coat to the monument of Lucy, son of Sir William Lucy, in which are quartered, in four several divisions, twelve little fishes, three in each division, probably *Luces*. This very coat, indeed, seems alluded to in Shallow's giving the dozen white *Luces*, and in Slender saying *he may quarter*. When I consider the exceeding candour and good-nature of our author (which inclined all the gentler part of the world to love him, as the power of his wit obliged the men of the most delicate knowledge and polite learning to admire him) ; and that he should throw this humorous piece of satire at his prosecutor, at least twenty years after the provocation given ; I am confidently persuaded it must be owing to an unforgiving rancour on the prosecutor's side : and, if this was the case, it were pity but the disgrace of such an inveteracy should remain as a lasting reproach, and Shallow

stand



stand as a mark of ridicule to stigmatize his malice.

“ It is said, our author spent some years before his death in ease, retirement, and the conversation of his friends, at his native Stratford. I could never pick up any certain intelligence, when he relinquished the stage. I know it has been mistakenly thought by some, that Spenser’s *Thalia*, in his *Tears of his Moses*, where she laments the loss of her Willy, in the comick scene, has been applied to our author’s quitting the stage. But Spenser himself, it is well known quitted the stage of life in the year 1598; and, five years after this, we find Shakspeare’s name among the actors in Ben Jonson’s *Sejanus*, which first made its appearance in the year 1603. Nor, surely, could he then have any thoughts of retiring, since that very year a licence under the privy-seal was granted by King James I. to him and Fletcher, Burbage, Phillippes, Heminge, Condell, &c. authorizing them to exercise the art of playing comedies, tragedies, &c. as well at their usual house called *The Globe*, on the other side of the water, as in any other parts of the kingdom, during his majesty’s pleasure (a copy of which license is preserved in *Ryder’s Fædera*.) Again, it is certain, that SHAKSPEARE did not exhibit

## LIFE OF SHAKSPEARE.

bit his *Macbeth* till after the Union was brought about, and till after King James I. had begun to touch for the *evil* ; for, it is plain, he has inserted compliments on both those accounts, upon his royal master in that tragedy. Nor, indeed, could the number of the dramattick pieces, he produced, admit of his retiring near so early as that period. So that what Spenser there says, if it relates at all to Shakspeare, must hint at some occasional recess he made for a time upon a disgust taken : or the Willy there mentioned, must relate to some other favourite poet. I believe, we may safely determine, that he had not quitted in the year 1610. For, in his *Tempest*, our author makes mention of the Bermuda islands, which were unknown to the English, till, in 1609, Sir John Summers made a voyage to North-America, and discovered them, and afterwards invited some of his countrymen to settle a plantation there. That he became the private gentleman, at least three years before his decease, is pretty obvious from another circumstance : I mean, from that remarkable and well-known story, which Mr. Rowe has given us of our author's intimacy with Mr. John Combe, an old gentleman noted thereabouts for his wealth  
and

LIFE OF SHAKSPEARE.

and usury; and upon whom SHAKSPEARE made the following facetious epitaph:

*Ten in the hundred lies here ingrav'd,  
'Tis a hundred to ten his soul is not sav'd;  
If any man ask, who lies in this tomb,  
Oh! oh! quoth the devil, 'tis my John-a-Combe.*

“This farcaistical piece of wit was, at the gentleman’s own request, thrown out extemporally in his company. And this Mr. John Combe I take to be the same, who, by Dugdale in his *Antiquities of Warwickshire*, is said to have died in the year 1614,\* and for whom, at the upper end of the choir of the Guild of the Holy Cross at Stratford, a fair monument is erected, having a statue thereon cut in alabaſter, and in a gown, with this epitaph. “Here lieth interred the body of  
“ John Combe, Esq. who died the 10th of July,  
“ 1614, who bequeathed several annual charities  
“ to the parish of Stratford, and 100l. to be lent  
“ to fifteen poor tradesmen from three years to  
“ three years, changing the parties every third

\* By Mr. Combe’s Will, which is now in the Prerogative-Office in London, Shakspeare had a legacy of five pounds bequeathed to him. This Will is without any date.

“ year

LIFE OF SHAKSPEARE.

“ year, at the rate of fifty shillings *per annum*,  
“ the increase to be distributed to the alms-poor  
“ there.”—The donation has all the air of a rich  
and sagacious usurer.

“ SHAKSPERE himself did not survive Mr. Combe long, for he died in the year 1616, on his birth day. He lies buried on the north side of the chancel in the great church at Stratford; where a monument, decent enough for the time, is erected to him, and placed against the wall. He is represented under an arch in a sitting posture, a cushion spread before him, with a pen in his right hand, and his left rested on a scroll of paper. The Latin distich, which is placed under the cushion, has been given us by Mr. Pope, or his graver, in this manner :

*INGENIO Pylium, genio Socratem, arte Maronem,  
Terra tegit, populus mæret, Olympus habet.*

“ I confess, I do not conceive the difference betwixt *ingenio* and *genio* in the first verse. They seem to me entirely synonymous terms; nor was the Pylian sage, Nestor, celebrated for his ingenuity, but for an experience and judgment owing

ing

ing to his long age. Dugdale, in his *Antiquities of Warwickshire*, has copied this distich with a distinction which Mr. Rowe has followed, and which certainly restores us the true meaning of the epitaph:

*JUDICIO Pylum, genio Socratem\*, &c.*

“ In 1614, the greatest part of the town of Stratford was consumed by fire; but our SHAKSPEARE’S  
house,

\* The first syllable in *Socratem* is here made short, which cannot be allowed. Perhaps we should read *Sophoclem*. Shakspeare is then appositely compared with a dramatick author among the ancients: but still it should be remembered that the elogium is lessened while the metre is reformed; and it is well known that some of our early writers of Latin poetry were uncommonly negligent in their prosody, especially in proper names. The thought of this distich, as Mr. Tollet observes, might have been taken from the *Fairy Queene* of Spenser, b. ii. c. 9. st. 48, and c. 10. st. 3.

To this Latin inscription on Shakspeare should be added the lines which are found underneath it on his monument:

Stay, passenger, why dost thou go so fast?  
Read, if thou canst, whom envious death hath plac’d  
Within this monument; Shakspeare, with whom  
Quick nature dy’d, whose name doth deck the tomb  
Far more than cost; since all that he hath writ  
Leaves living art but page to serve his wit.

Again

## LIFE OF SHAKSPEARE.

house, among some others, escaped the flames. This house was first built by Sir Hugh Clopton, a younger brother of an ancient family in that neighbourhood, who took their name from the manor of Clopton. Sir Hugh was Sheriff of London in the reign of Richard III. and lord-mayor in the reign of king Henry VII. To this gentleman the town of Stratford is indebted for the fine stone-bridge, consisting of fourteen arches, which, at an extraordinary expence, he built over the Avon, together with a causeway running at the west-end thereof; as also for rebuilding the chapel adjoining to his house, and the cross-aisle in the church there. It is remarkable of him, that though he lived and died a bachelor, among the other extensive charities which he left both to the city of London and town of Stratford, he bequeathed considerable

Again, near the wall on which this monument is erected, is a plain free-stone, under which his body is buried, with another epitaph, expressed in an uncouth mixture of small and capital letters:

Good friend for Iesus SAKE forbear  
To digg T-E Dust EncloAsed HERe  
Blese be T-E Man  $\overline{\text{T}}$  spares TEs Stones  
And curst be He  $\overline{\text{T}}$  moves my bones.

legacies

## LIFE OF SHAKSPEARE.

legacies for the marriage of poor maidens of good name and fame both in London and at Stratford. Notwithstanding which large donations in his life, and bequest at his death, as he had purchased the manor of Clopton, and all the state of the family, so he left the same again to his elder brother's son, with a very great addition (a proof how well beneficence and œconomy may walk hand in hand in wise families :) good part of which estate is yet in the possession of Edward Clopton, Esq. and Sir Hugh Clopton, knt. lineally descended from the elder brother of the first Sir Hugh, who particularly bequeathed to his nephew, by his will, his house, by the name of his *Great House* in Stratford.

“The estate had now been sold out of the Clopton family for above a century, at the time when SHAKSPEARE became the purchaser; who, having repaired and modelled it to his own mind, changed the name to *New-Place*, which the mansion-house, since erected upon the same spot at this day retains. The house and lands, which attended it, continued in SHAKSPEARE's descendants to the time of the *Restoration*; when they were repurchased by the Clopton family, and the mansion

manſion now belongs to Sir Hugh Clopton, knt. To the favour of this worthy gentleman I owe the knowledge of one particular, in honour of our poet's once dwelling-houſe, of which, I preſume, Mr. Rowe never was apprized. When the civil war raged in England, and king Charles the Firſt's queen was driven by the neceſſity of affairs to make a reſeſ in Warwickſhire, ſhe kept her court for three weeks in New place. We may reaſonably ſuppoſe it then the beſt private houſe in the town; and her majeſty preferred it to the college, which was in the poſſeſſion of the Combe family, who did not ſo ſtrongly favour the king's party.

“ How much our author employed himſelf in poetry, after his retirement from the ſtage, does not ſo evidently appear: very few poſthumous ſketches of his pen have been recovered to aſſertain that point. We have been told, indeed, in print, but not till very lately, that two large cheſts full of this great man's looſe papers and manuſcripts in the hands of an ignorant baker of Warwick (who married one of the deſcendants from our SHAKSPEARE,) were careleſſly ſcattered and thrown about as garret-lumber and litter, to  
the



## LIFE OF SHAKSPEARE.

the particular knowledge of the late Sir William Bishop, till they were all consumed in the general fire and destruction of that town. I cannot help being a little apt to distrust the authority of this tradition, because his wife survived him seven years; and, as his favourite daughter Susanna survived her twenty-six years, it is very improbable they should suffer such a treasure to be removed, and translated into a remoter branch of the family, without a scrutiny first made into the value of it. This, I say, inclines me to distrust the authority of the relation: but, notwithstanding such an apparent improbability, if we really lost such a treasure, by whatever fatality or caprice of fortune they came into such ignorant and neglectful hands, I agree with the *relater*, the misfortune is wholly irreparable.

No mention has been made of the nature of the malady which brought SHAKSPEARE to his grave; he met the stroke of death on his birth day, having just completed his 52d year. It may be regretted that a longer span to his existence was denied, but let it be considered, that while an infant in his cradle he was preserved amidst surrounding danger. The plague broke out at Stratford, and

## LIFE OF SHAKSPEARE.

was so dreadful in its effects between Midsummer and Christmas, that 238 persons were, during that period, carried to their graves: “of which number,” says Malone, probably 216 died of that malignant distemper, and one only resided, not in Stratford, but in the neighbouring town of Welcombe. In a calculation, too much allied to several other trifles to be met with in his labours, this gentleman accounts for his supposition, “fortunately for mankind it did not reach the house in which the infant SHAKSPEARE lay, for not one of that name appear in the dead list.”

To do justice to the task of deliniating the character of a SHAKSPEARE would demand a genius unbounded as his own. We can sound the shallow stream, and measure with accuracy the green hills, but who can fathom the ocean, or to nice calculation reduce the blue heights of the Alps that repose their heads upon the clouds? The reputation of other writers dwindles away from a close inspection of their works, but the nearer we examine the writings of SHAKSPEARE the more we are struck with admiration. The pillar of fame, which the genius of that bard has erected, resembles those stupendous monuments of Egyptian

gyptian grandeur, which have braved, unimpaired, for so many centuries, the iron tooth of time, at a great distance the traveller beholds them mixing their almost invisible summits with the sky; as he approaches nearer and nearer the giant pile expands and grows upon his sight; till, at length, dumb and motionless, and amazed, he stands at the foot of the immeasurable magnitude.

Of posthumous reputation however our Bard was little solicitous. With a noble negligence he abandoned his writings to the guardianship of chance, and, like the leaves of the sybil, the works of SHAKSPEARE, destined to become the oracles of future ages, were long blown about by every gust of pedant ignorance or popular opinion. In the profound philosophy of our Bard the "bubble reputation" was held in slight esteem; in the noble flights of fancy the thoughts of public opinion were left below, despising the glittering allurements of fame; our SHAKSPEARE soared above those sublunary glories, which, like the baseless fabric of a vision, "melts into thin air," and leaves no trace behind." Hence at an early period of life he retired from the career of glory to experience the more real and substantial enjoyment of peace, ease, and rural happiness.

\*\*\*\*\*+\*\*\*\*\*

O D E

O N T H E

GENIUS OF SHAKSPEARE.

RAPT from the glance of mortal eye,  
Say bursts thy Genius to the world of light?  
Seeks it yon star-bespangled sky?  
Or skims it's fields with rapid flight?  
Or mid' yon plains where Fancy strays,  
Courts it the balmy-breathing gale?  
Or where the violent pale  
Droops o'er the green-embroider'd stream;  
Or where young Zephir stirs the rustling sprays,  
Lies all dissolv'd in fairy-dream.  
O'er yon bleak desert's unfrequented round  
See'st thou where Nature treads the deepening  
                  gloom,  
Sits on yon hoary tow'r with ivy crown'd,  
Or wildly wails o'er thy lamented tomb;

Hear'st

ODE ON SHAKSPEARE.

Hear'st thou the solemn music wind along?  
Or thrills the warbling note in thy mellifluous song?

Oft while on earth 'twas thine to rove  
Where'er the wild-eyed Goddess lov'd to roam,  
To trace serene the gloomy grove,  
Or haunt meek Quiet's simple dome;  
Still hovering round the Nine appear,  
That pour the soul-transporting strain;  
Join'd to the Loves' gay train,  
The loose-robed Graces crown'd with flow'rs  
The light-wing'd gales that lead the vernal year,  
And wake the rosy-featured Hours.  
O'er all bright Fancy's beamy radiance shone,  
How flam'd thy bosom as her charms reveal!  
Her fire-clad eye sublime, her starry zone,  
Her tresses loose that wanton'd on the gale;  
On Thee the Goddess fix'd her ardent look,  
Then from her glowing lips these melting accents  
broke.

“ To Thee, my favourite son, belong  
“ The lays that steal the listening hour;  
“ To pour the rapture-darting song,  
“ To paint gay Hope's elysian bower.

“ From

ODE ON SHAKSPEARE.

“ From Nature’s hand to snatch the dart,  
“ To cleave with pangs the bleeding heart;  
“ Or lightly sweep the trembling string,  
“ And call the Loves with purple wing  
“ From the blue deep where they dwell  
“ With Naiads in the pearly cell,  
“ Soft on the sea-born Goddesses gaze;  
“ Or in the loose robe’s floating maze,  
“ Dissolv’d in downy slumbers rest;  
“ Or flutter o’er her panting breast.  
“ Or wild to melt the yielding soul,  
“ Let Sorrow clad in fable stole  
“ Slow to thy musing thought appear;  
“ Or penfive Pity Pale;  
“ Or Love’s desponding tale  
“ Call from th’ intender’d heart the sympathetic  
“ tear.”

Say whence the magic of thy mind?  
Why thrills thy music on the springs of thought?  
Why, at thy pencil’s touch refin’d  
Starts into life the glowing draught?  
On yonder fairy carpet laid,  
Where Beauty pours eternal bloom,  
And Zephyr breaths perfume;  
There nightly to the tranced eye

Profuse

ODE ON SHAKSPEARE.

Profuse the radiant goddess stood display'd,  
With all her smiling offspring nigh,  
Sudden the mantling cliff, the arched wood,  
The brodered mead, the landskip, and the grove,  
Hills, vales, and sky-dipt seas, and torrents rude,  
Grots, rills and shades, and bowers that breath'd  
of love

All burst to fight!—while glancing on the view,  
Titania's sporting train brush'd lightly o'er the  
dew.

The pale-eyed Genius of the shade  
Led thy bold step to Prosper's magic bower;  
Whose voice the howling winds obey'd,  
Whose dark spell chain'd the rapid hour:  
Then rose serene the sea-girt isle;  
Gay scenes by Fancy's touch refin'd  
Glow'd to the musing mind:  
Such visions bless the hermit's dream,  
When hovering Angels prompt his placid smile,  
Or paint some high ecstatic theme.  
Then flam'd Miranda on th' enraptur'd gaze,  
Then sail'd bright Ariel on the bat's fleet wing:  
Or starts the list'ning throng in still amaze!  
The wild note trembling on th' aerial string!

The

ODE ON SHAKSPEARE.

The form in heav'n's resplendent vesture gay  
Floats on the mantling cloud, and pours the melt-  
ing lay.

O lay me near yon limpid stream,  
Whose murmur soothes the ear of Woe!  
There in some sweet poetic dream  
Let Fancy's bright Elysium glow!  
'Tis done:—o'er all the blushing mead  
The dark Wood shakes his cloudy head;  
Below, the lily-fringed dale  
Breathes its milds fragrance on the gale;  
While in pastime all-unseen,  
Titania robed in mantle green  
Sports on the mossy bank:—her train  
Skims light along the gleaming plain;  
Or to the fluttering breeze unfold  
The blue wing streak'd with beamy gold,  
Its pinions opening to the light!—  
Say, bursts the vision on my sight?  
Ah, no! by Shakspeare's pencil drawn,  
The beauteous shapes appear;  
While meek-eyed Cynthia near  
Illumes with streamy ray the silver-mantled lawn.

But



ODE ON SHAKSPEARE.

But hark ! the Tempest howls afar !  
Bursts the loud whirlwind o'er the pathless waste !  
What Cherub blows the trump of war ?  
What Demon rides the stormy blast ?  
Red from the lightning's livid blaze,  
The bleak heath rushes on the fight ;  
Then wrapt in sudden night  
Dissolves.—But ah ! what kingly form  
Roams the lone desert's desolated maze !  
Unaw'd ! nor heeds the sweeping storm.  
Ye pale-eyed lightnings spare the cheek of age !  
Vain wish ;—though Anguish heaves the bursting  
    groan.  
Deaf as the flint, the marble ear of Rage  
Hears not the Mourner's unavailing moan :  
Heart-pierc'd he bleeds, and stung with wild de-  
    spair  
Bares his time-blasted head, and tears his silver hair.

Lo ! on yon long-refounding shore,  
Where the rock totters o'er the headlong deep ;  
What phantomes bathed in infant gore  
Stand muttering on the dizzy steep !  
Their murmur shakes the zephyr's wing !  
The storm obeys their powerful spell ;  
See, from His gloomy cell

ODE ON SHAKSPEARE.

Fierce Winter starts! his scowling eye  
Bloats the fair mantle of the breathing Spring,  
And lowers along the ruffled sky.  
To the deep vault the yelling harpies run,\*  
Its yawning mouth receives th' infernal crew.  
Dim thro' the black gloom winks the glimmering  
fun,  
And the pale furnace gleams with brimstone blue.  
Hell howls: and fiends that join the dire acclaim  
Dance on the bubbling tide, and point the livid  
flame.

But ah! on Sorrow's cypress bough  
Can Beauty breathe her genial bloom?  
On Death's cold cheek will Passion glow?  
Or Music warble from the tomb?  
There sleeps the Bard, whose tuneful tongue  
Pour'd the full stream of mazy song.  
Young spring with lip of ruby, here  
Showers from her lap the blushing year;  
While along the turf reclin'd,  
The loose wing swimming on the wind,  
The Loves with forward gesture bold,  
Sprinkle the sod with spangling gold;

\* The Witches in Macbeth.

And

ODE ON SHAKSPEARE.

And oft the blue-eyed graces trim,  
Dance lightly round on downy limb ;  
Oft too, when Eve demure and still  
Chequers the green dale's purling rill,  
Sweet Fancy pours th' plaintive strain,  
Or wrapt in soothing dream,  
By Avon's ruffled stream,  
Hears the low-murmuring gale that dies along the  
plain.

---

*An Inscription for a Monument of SHAKSPEARE.*

O Youths and Virgins : O declining eld :  
O pale misfortune's slaves : O ye who dwell  
Unknown in humble quiet ; ye who wait  
In courts, or fill the golden feat of kings :  
O sons of sports and pleasure ; O thou wretch  
That weepest for jealous love, or the fore wounds  
Of conscious guilt, or deaths rapacious hand,  
Which led thee void of hope : O ye who roam  
In exile ; ye who through the embattled field  
Seek bright renown ; or who for nobler palms  
Contend, the leaders of a public cause ;  
Approach : behold this marble. Know ye not

INSCRIPTION FOR SHAKSPEARE.

The features? Hath not oft his faithful tongue  
Told you the fashion of your own estate,  
The secrets of your bosom? Here then, round  
His monument with reverence while ye stand,  
Say to each other: " This was SHAKSPEARE'S  
form ;

" Who walk'd in every path of human life,  
" Felt every passion ; and to all mankind  
" Doth now, will ever, that experience yield  
" Which his own genius only could acquire."

AKENSIDE.

---

*In Memory of our famous SHAKSPEARE.*

SACRED Spirit, whilst thy lyre  
Echoed o'er the Arcadian plains,  
Even Apollo did admire,  
Orpheus wonder'd at thy strains.

Plautus sigh'd, Syphocles wept  
Tears of anger, for to hear,  
After they so long had slept,  
So bright a genius should appear,

Who

IN MEMORY OF SHAKSPEARE.

Who wrote his lines with a sun-beam,  
More durable than time or fate :  
Others boldly do blaspheme,  
Like those who seem to preach, but prate.

Thou wert truly priest elect,  
Chosen darling to the Nine,  
Such a trophy to erect  
By thy wit and skill divine ;  
That were all their other glories  
(Them excepted) torn away,  
By thy admirable stories  
Their garments ever shall be gay.

Where thy honoured bones do lie,  
(As Statius once to Maro's urn,)   
Thither every year will I  
Slowly tread, and sadly mourn.

S. SHEPPARD.\*

---

When learning's triumph o'er her barb'rous foes  
First rear'd the stage, immortal SHAKSPEARE rose ;  
Each change of many-colour'd life he drew,  
Exhausted worlds, and then imagin'd new :

\* *Author of a small volume of Epigrams, published 1651.*

His

THE TOMB OF SHAKSPEARE.

Existence saw him spurn her bounded reign,  
And panting time toil'd after him in vain:  
His powerful strokes presiding truth impress'd  
And unresisted passion storm'd the breast.

By DR. SAMUEL JOHNSON.

---

The TOMB of SHAKSPEARE,

A V I S I O N,

By *John* GILBERT COOPER, Esq.

WHAT time the jocund rose-bosom'd hours  
Led forth the train of PHOEBUS and the SPRING,  
And ZEPHYR mild profusely scatter'd flowers  
On earth's green mantle from his musky wing.

The MORN unbarr'd th' ambrosial gates of light,  
Westward the raven-pinnion'd darkness flew,  
The Landscape smil'd in vernal beauty bright,  
And to their graves the fullen Ghosts withdrew.

The

THE TOMB OF SHAKSPEARE.

The Nightingale no longer swelled her throat  
With love-lorn plainings tremulous and slow,  
And on the wings of silence ceas'd to float  
The gargling Notes of her melodious woe :

The God of sleep mysterious visions led  
In gay procession, 'fore the mental eye ;  
And my freed soul awhile her mansion fled,  
To try her plumes for immortality.

Through fields of air, methought, I took my flight,  
Through every clime, o'er every region pass'd,  
No Paradise or ruin 'scap'd my sight,  
HESPERIAN garden, or CIMMERIAN waste.

On AVON's banks I lit, whose streams appear  
To wind with eddies find round SHAKSPEARE's  
tomb,

The year's first feath'ry songsters warble near,  
And vi'lets breathe, and earliest roses bloom.

Here FANCY sat, (her dewy fingers cold  
Decking with flow'rett fresh th' un sullied sod,)  
And bath'd with tears the sad sepulchral mold,  
Her fav'rite offspring's long and last abode.

Ah ! what avails, she cry'd, a Poet's name ?  
Ah ! what avails th' immortalizing breath

To

THE TOMB OF SHAKSPEARE.

To snatch from dumb oblivion others fame?  
My darling child here lies a prey to death!

Let gentle ORWAY, white-rob'd Pity's priest,  
From grief domestic teach the tears to flow,  
Or SOUTHERN captivate th' impassion'd breast  
With heart-felt sighs and sympathy of woe.

For not to these *his* genius was confin'd,  
Nature and I each tuneful pow'r had given,  
Poetic transports of the madding mind,  
And the wing'd words that waft the soul to  
heaven.

The fiery glance of th' intellectual eye,  
Piercing all objects of creations store,  
Which in this world' extended surface lie;  
And plastic thought that still creat'd more.

O grant, with eager rapture I reply'd,  
Grant me, great goddess of the changeful eye,  
To view each Being in poetic pride,  
To whom thy son gave immortality.

Sweet Fancy smil'd, and wav'd her mystic rod,  
When strait these visions felt her powerful arm,  
And one by one succeeded at her nod,  
As vassal Sprites obey the wizard charm.

First



THE TOMB OF SHAKSPEARE.

First a celestial form (of azure hue  
Whose mantle, bound with brede aetherial, flow'd  
To each soft breeze its balmy breath that drew)  
Swift down the sun-beams of the noon-tide rode.

Obedient to the necromantic sway  
Of an old sage to solitude resign'd,  
With fenny vapors he obscur'd the day,  
Launch'd the long lightning, and let loose the  
wind.

He whirl'd the tempest through the howling air,  
Rattled the dreadful thunder-clap on high,  
And rais'd the roaring elemental war  
Betwixt the sea green waves and azure sky.

Then, like heaven's mild embassador of love  
To man repentant, bade the tumult cease,  
Smooth'd the blue bosom of the realms above,  
And hush'd the rebel elements to peace.

Unlike to this in spirit or in mein  
Another form succeeded to my view;  
A two-legg'd brute which Nature made in spleen,  
Or from the loathing womb unfinished drew.

Scarce could he syllable the curse he thought,  
Prone were his eyes to earth, his mind to evil,  
A carnal fiend to imperfection wrought,  
The mongrel offspring of a Witch and Devil.

THE TOMB OF SHAKSPEARE.

Next bloom'd, upon an ancient forest's bound,  
The flow'ry margin of a silent stream,  
O'er-arch'd by oaks with ivy mantled round,  
And gilt by silver CYNTHIA's maiden beam.

On the green carpet of th' unbended grass,  
A dapper train of female fairies play'd,  
And ey'd their gambols in the wa'try glass,  
That smoothly stole along the shad'wy glade.

Through these the queen TITANIA pass'd ador'd,  
Mounted aloft in her imperial car,  
Journeying to see great OBERON her lord  
Wage the mock battles of a sportive war.

Arm'd cap-a-pee forth march'd the fairy king,  
A stouter warrior never took the field,  
His threat'ning lance a hornet's horrid sting,  
The sharded beetle's scale his fable shield.

Around their chief the elfin host appear'd;  
Each little helmet sparkled like a star,  
And their sharp spears in pierceless phalanx rear'd,  
A grove of thistles, glitter'd in the air.

The scene then chang'd, from this romantic land,  
To a bleak waste by bound'ry unconfin'd,  
Where three swart sisters of the *weird* band  
Were mutt'ring curses to the troublous wind.

THE TOMB OF SHAKSPEARE.

Pale Want had wither'd every furrow'd face,  
Bow'd was each carcase with the weight of years,  
And each sunk eye-ball from its hollow case  
Distill'd cold rheum's involuntary tears.

Hors'd on three staves they posted to the bourn  
Of a drear island, where the pendant brow  
Of a rough rock, shagg'd horribly with thorn,  
Frown'd on the boist'rous waves which rag'd  
below.

Deep in a gloomy grot remote from day,  
Where smiling Comfort never shew'd her face,  
Where light ne'er enter'd, save one rueful ray  
Discovering all the terrors of the place.

They held damn'd myst'ries with infernal state,  
Whilst ghastly spectres glided slowly by,  
The screech-owl scream'd the dying call of fate,  
And ravens croak'd their baleful augury.

No human footstep cheer'd the dread abode,  
No sign of living creature could be seen,  
Save where the reptile snake, or fallen toad,  
The murky floor had soil'd with venom green.

Sudden I heard the whirlwind's hollow sound,  
Each *weird* sister vanish'd into smoke,  
Now a dire yell of spirits underground  
Thro' troubled Earth's wide yawning surface  
broke;

THE TOMB OF SHAKSPEARE.

When lo! each injur'd apparition rose;  
Aghast the murd'rer started from his bed;  
Guilt's trembling breath his heart's red current  
froze,  
And Horror's dew-drops bath'd his frantic head.

More had I seen—but now the God of day  
O'er earth's broad breast his flood of light had  
spread,

When Morpheus call'd his fickle dreams away,  
And on *their* wings each bright illusion fled.

Yet still the dear ENCHANTRESS of the brain  
My waking eyes with wishful wand'rings sought,  
Whose magic will controls th' ideal train,  
The ever-restless progeny of THOUGHT.

Sweet power, I said, for others gild the ray  
Of Wealth, or Honor's folly-feather'd crown,  
Or lead the madding multitude astray  
To grasp at air-blown bubbles of renown.

Me (humbler lot!) let blameless bliss engage,  
Free from the noble mob's ambitious strife,  
Free from the muck-worm miser's lucrous rage,  
In calm Contentment's cottage vale of life.

If frailties there (for who from them is free?)  
Through Error's maze my devious footsteps lead,  
Let them be frailties of humanity,  
And my heart plead the pardon of my head.

Let

THE TOMB OF SHAKSPEARE.

Let not my reason impiously require

What heav'n has plac'd beyond its narrow span,  
But teach it to subduc each fierce desire,  
Which wars within its own small empire, man.

Teach me, what all believe, but few possess;

That life's best science is ourselves to know,  
The first of human blessings is to bless,  
And happiest he who feels another's woe.

Thus cheaply wise, and innocently great,

While Time's smooth sand shall regularly pass,  
Each destin'd atom's quiet course I'll wait,  
Nor rashly break, nor wish to stop the glass.

And when in death my peaceful ashes lie,

If e'er some tongue congenial speaks my name,  
Friendship shall never blush to breathe a sigh,  
And great ones envy such an honest fame.

SHAK-

---

S H A K S P E A R E's W I L L,  
Extracted from the Registry of the Archbishop  
of Canterbury.

*Vicesimo quinto die Martii Anno Regni Domini nostri  
Jacebi nunc Regis Angliæ &c. decimo quarto &  
Scotiæ quadragesimo nono, Anno Domini 1616.*

**I**N the name of God, *Amen.* I *William Shakspeare* of *Stratford-upon-Avon*, in the county of *Warwick*, Gent. in perfect health and memory, God be praised, do make and ordain this my last Will and Testament in manner and form following; that is to say:

*First*, I commend my soul into the hands of God my Creator, hoping, and assuredly believing, through the only merits of Jesus Christ my Saviour, to be made partaker of life everlasting; and my body to the earth whereof that is made.

*Item*, I give and bequeath unto my daughter *Judith* one hundred and fifty pounds of lawful *English* money, to be paid unto her in manner and form following; that is to say, one hundred pounds in discharge of her marriage portion within one year after my decease, with considerations after the rate of two shillings in the pound for so long

SHAKSPEARE'S WILL.

long time as the same shall be unpaid unto her after my decease; and the fifty pounds residue thereof upon her surrendering of a living of such sufficient security as the overseers of this my will shall like of, to surrender or grant all her estate and right that shall descend or come unto her after my decease, or that she now hath of, in, or to one copyhold tenement, with the appurtenances lying and being in *Stratford-upon-Avon* aforesaid, in the said county of *Warwick*, being parcell or holden of the manor of *Rowington*, unto my daughter *Susannab Hall*, and her heirs for ever.

*Item*, I give and bequeath unto my said daughter *Judith* one hundred and fifty pounds more, if she, or any issue of her body, be living at the end of three years next ensuing the day of the date of this my will, during which time my executors to pay her consideration from my decease according to the rate aforesaid: and if she die within the said term without issue of her body, then my Will is, and I do give and bequeath one hundred pounds thereof to my niece *Elizabeth Hall*, and the fifty pounds to be set forth by my executors during the life of my sister *Joan Harte*, and the use and profit thereof coming, shall be paid to my sister *Joan*, and after her decease the fifty pounds shall remain amongst the children of my said sister, equally to be divided amongst them; but if my said daughter

*Judith*

# SHAKSPEARE'S WILL.

*Judith* be living at the end of the said three years, or any issue of her body, then my Will is, and so I devise and bequeath the said hundred and fifty pounds to be set out by my executors and overseers for the best benefit of her and her issue, and the stock not to be paid unto her so long as she shall be married and covert Baron; but my Will is that she shall have the consideration yearly paid unto her during her life, and after her decease the said stock and consideration to be paid to her children, if she have any, and if not, to her executors and assigns, she living the said term after my decease; provided that is such husband as she shall at the end of the said three years be married unto, or at and after, do sufficiently assure unto her, and the issue of her body, land answerable to the portion by this my Will given unto her, and to be adjudged so by my executors and overseers, then my Will is, that the said hundred and fifty pounds shall be paid to such husband as shall make such assurance, to his own use.

*Item*, I give and bequeath unto my said sister *Joan* twenty pounds, and all my wearing apparel, to be paid and delivered within one year after my decease; and I do will and devise unto her the house with the appurtenances in *Stratford*, wherein she dwelleth, for her natural life, under the yearly rent of twelve-pence.

*Item*,



SHAKESPEARE'S WILL.

*Item*, I give and bequeath unto her three sons, *William Harte*, — — *Harte*, and *Michael Harte*, five pounds a piece, to be paid within one year after my decease.

*Item*, I give and bequeath unto the said *Elizabeth Hall* all my plate that I now have, except my broad silver and gilt boxes, at the date of this my Will.

*Item*, I give and bequeath unto the poor of *Stratford* afore said ten pounds, to *Mr. Thomas Combe* my sword, to *Thomas Russel*, Esq. five pounds, and to *Francis Collins* of the borough of *Warwick*, in the county of *Warwick*, Gent. thirteen pounds six shillings and eight-pence, to be paid within one year after my decease.

*Item*, I give and bequeath to *Hamlett Sadler* twenty six shillings, eight pence to buy him a ring; to *William Reynolds*, Gent. twenty six shillings, eight pence to buy him a ring; to my godson *William Walker* twenty shillings in gold, to *Anthony Nash*, Gent. twenty six shillings, eight pence; and to *Mr. John Nash* twenty six shillings, eight pence; and to my Fellows *John Hemynge*, *Richard Burbage*, and *Henry Cundell*, twenty six shillings, eight pence apiece to buy the rings.

*Item*, I give, will, bequeath, and devise unto my daughter *Susannah Hall*, for the better enabling of her to perform this my Will, and towards the performance thereof, all that capital messuage or

SHAKSPEARE'S WILL.

tenement, with the appurtenances in *Stratford* aforefaid, called the *New Place*, wherein I now dwell, and two meffuages or tenements, with the appurtenances, fittuate, lying, and being in *Henley Street* within the borough of *Stratford* aforefaid; and all my barns, ftables, orchards, gardens, lands, tenements, and hereditaments whatfoever, fittuate, lying, and being, or to be had, referved, preferved or taken within the towns, hamlets, villages, fields, and grounds of *Stratford-upon-Avon*, *Old Stratford*, *Bushaxton*, and *Welcombe*, or in any of them, in the faid county of *Warwick*; and alfo all that meffuage or tenement, with the appurtenances, wherein one *John Robinson* dwelleth, fittuate, lying, and being in the *Black-Friers* in *London* near the *Wardrobe*; and all other my lands, tenements, and hereditaments whatfoever; to have and to hold all and fingular the faid premifes, with their appurtenances unto the faid *Susannah Hail*, for and during the term of her natural life; and after her deceafe to the firft fon of her body lawfully iffuing, and to the heirs males of the body of the faid firft fon lawfully iffuing; and for default of fuch iffue, to the fecond fon of her body lawfully iffuing, and to the heirs males of the body of the faid fecond fon lawfully iffuing; and for default of fuch heirs to the third fon of the body of the faid *Susanna* lawfully iffuing, and of the heirs males of the body of the faid third fon lawfully iffuing; and for default  
of

SHAKSPEARE'S WILL.

of such issue, the same to be and remain to the fourth, fifth, sixth, and seventh sons of her body, lawfully issuing one after another, and to the heirs males of the bodies of the said fourth, fifth, sixth, and seventh sons lawfully issuing, in such manner as it is before limited to be and remain to the first, second, and third sons of her body, and to their heirs males; and for default of such issue, the said premises to be and remain to my said niece *Hall*, and the heirs males of her body lawfully issuing; and for default of such issue, to my daughter *Judith*, and the heirs males of her body lawfully issuing; and for default of such issue, to the right heirs of me the said *William Shakspeare* for ever.

*Item*, I give unto my wife my brown best bed with the furniture.

*Item*, I give and bequeath to my said daughter *Judith* my broad silver gilt bole. All the rest of my goods, chattels, leases, plate, Jewels, and household-stuff whatsoever, after my debts and legacies paid, and my funeral expences discharged, I give, devise, and bequeath to my son-in-law *John Hall*, Gent. and my daughter *Susanna* his wife, who I ordain and make executors of this my last will and testament. And I do intreat and appoint the said *Thomas Russel*, Esq. and *Francis Collins*, Gent. to be overseers hereof. And do revoke all former Wills, and publish this to be my last Will and Testament,

SHAKSPEARE'S WILL.

Testament. In witness whereof I have hereunto put my hand the day and year first above-written, by me

*William Shakspeare.*

*Witness to the publishing hereof.*

Fra. Collins,  
Julius Shaw,  
John Robinson,  
Hamlett Sadler,  
Robert Whattcott.

*Probatum coram Magistro William Byrde Legum  
Doctore Commissario &c. vicesimo secundo die  
Mensis Junii Anno Domini 1616. Juramento  
Johannis Hall unius ex. et cui, &c. de bene et  
Jurat Reservata potestate et Susannæ Hall alt.  
ex. &c. cu. vendit &c. petitur.*

---

SHAKSPEARE'S COAT OF ARMS.

THE FOLLOWING INSTRUMENT IS COPIED FROM  
THE ORIGINAL IN THE COLLEGE OF HERALDS: IT IS MARKED G. 13. P. 349.

TO all and singuler noble and gentlemen of all  
estats and degrees, bearing arms, to whom these  
presents shall come, William Dethic, Garter, Prin-  
cipall.

## SHAKSPEARE'S COAT OF ARMS.

chief King of Arms of England, and William Camden, alias Clarencieux, King of Arms for the fourth, east, and west parts of this realme, sendethe greeting. Know ye, that in all nations and kingdoms the record and remembrance of the valiant facts and vertuous dispositions of worthy men have been made knowne and divulged by certeyne shields of arms and tokens of chevalrie; the grant and testimonie whereof apperteyneth unto us, by vertu of our offices from the Queenes most Excellent Majestie, and her Highenes most noble and victorious progenitors: wherefore being solicited, and by credible report informed, that John Shakspeare, now of Stratford-upon-Avon, in the countie of Warwick, gent. whose parent, great grandfather, and late anteecessor, for his faithfull and approved service to the late most prudent prince, king Henry VII. of famous memorie, was advaunced and rewarded with lands and tenements, geven to him in those parts of Warwickshire, where they have continewed by some descents in good reputacion and credit; and for that the said John Shakspeare having maryed the daughter and one of the heys of Robert Arden of Wellincote, in the said countie, and also produced this his auncient cote of arms, heretofore assigned to him whilest he was her Majesties officer and baylefe of that towne; In consideration of the premisses, and for the encouragement

# SHAKSPEARE'S COAT OF ARMS.

ragement of his posteritie, unto whom suche blazon of arms and achievements of inheritance from theyre said mother, by the auntyent custome and lawes of arms, may lawfully descend; We the said Garter and Clarencieulx have assigned, graunted, and by these presents exemplified unto the said John Shakspeare, and to his posteritie, that shield and cote of arms, *viz. In a field of gould upon a bend fables a speare of the first, the poynt upward, headed argent*; and for his crest or cognifance, *A falcon with his wyngs displayed, standing on a torsethe of his roullers, supporting a speare armed bedded, or steeled sylver*, fixxed upon a helmet with mantell and tassels, as more playnely may appear depicted on this margent; and we have likewise uppon onother escucheon impaled the same with the auntyent arms of the said Arden of Wellincote; signifieng thereby, that it maye and shalbe lawfull for the said John Shakspeare, gent. to beare and use the same shield of arms single or impaled, as aforesaid, during his naturall lyffe; and that it shal be lawfull for his children, yssue, and posterite, (lawfully begotten,) to beare, use, and quarter, and shew forth the same, with theyre dewe differences, in all lawfull warlyke facts and civile use or exercises, according to the lawes of arms, and custome that to gentlemen belongethe, without let or interruption of any person or persons, for use or bearing the same. In wyttnesse and testemonye  
whereof

SHAKSPEARE'S COAT OF ARMS.

whereof we have subscribed our names, and fast-  
ened the seals of our offices, geven at the Office  
of Arms, London, the            day of  
in the xlii yere of the reigne of our most gracious  
Sovraigne lady Elizabeth, by the grace of God,  
quene of England, France, and Ireland, defender  
of the faith, &c. 1599.



*Explanations of the Allegorical Frontispieces and  
Vignettes.*

V O L. I.

The Comic Muse dictating to Shakspeare, and  
Fancy strewing flowers over his productions.  
Shakspeare's Comic characters personified by  
infants.

V O L. II.

An infant Shakspeare in the realms of Fancy.  
The Comic Muse surrounded by the visions of  
Fancy.

V O L. III.

Fairies adorning Shakspeare's grave.  
Fiction attending Shakspeare's dreams.

V O L. IV.

Britannia crowning Shakspeare.  
Shakspeare honoured by the Muses.

V O L. V.

Fancy decorating the tomb of Shakspeare.  
Shakspeare holding up the mirror to dignified  
guilt.

V O L. VI.

Youth attending the dictates of Shakspeare.  
The Tragic and Comic Muse adorning the statue  
of Shakspeare.

V O L. VII.

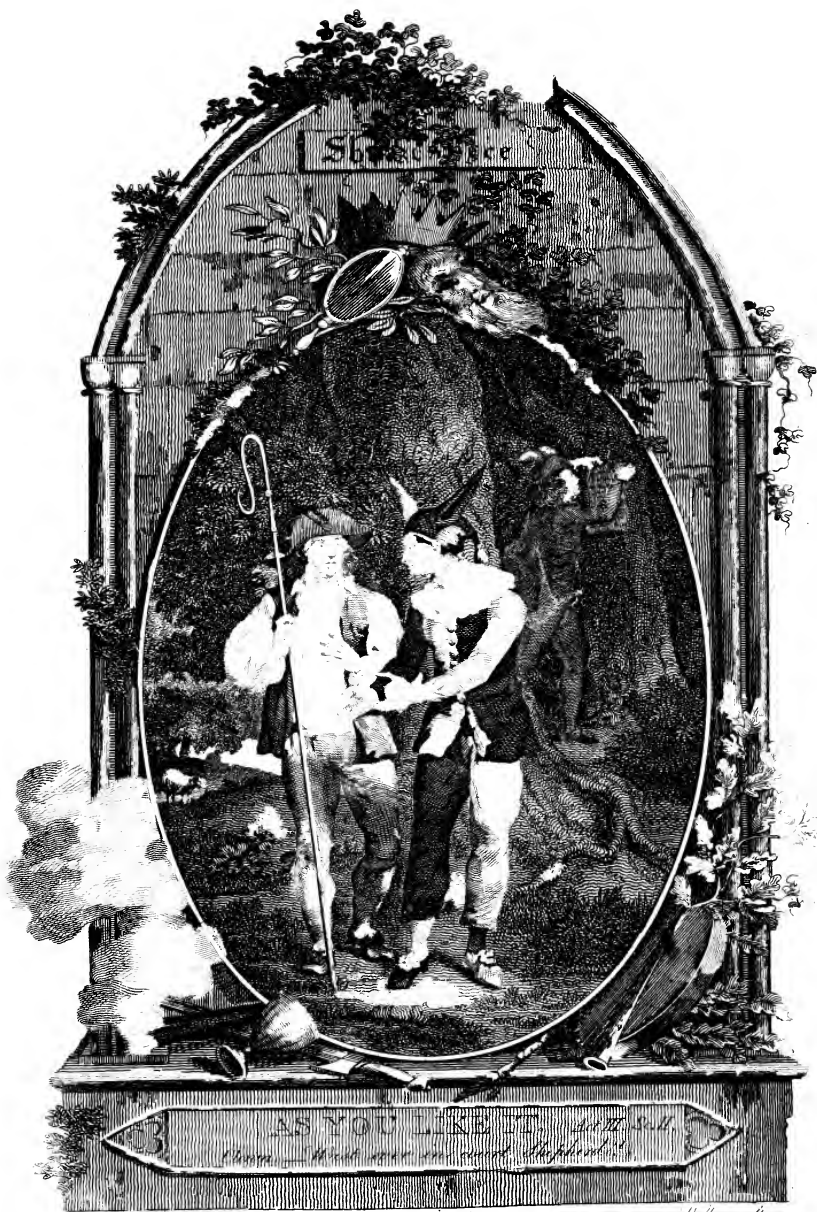
The Historic Muse dictating to Shakspeare.  
The Historic Muse at the tomb of Shakspeare.

V O L. VIII.

Shakspeare entering the realms of Terror and  
Pity.  
Shakspeare's Tragic characters personified by in-  
fants.







*Carved in the del.*

*Published in the 1st Vols. by Bellamy & Co. 1787.*



AS YOU LIKE IT. ACT IV. SC. III.

Orlando. Harry will never return, they do look on blood.

Co. Audel del.

Walker sculp.

Published as the Act binds, by T. Bellamy, 1787.



---

AS YOU LIKE IT.

A

C O M E D Y.

BY

*WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE.*

---

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

DUKE.

FREDERICK, *brother to the Duke, and usurper of his dukedom.*

AMIENS, } *Lords attending upon the Duke in his banishment.*  
JAQUES, }

LE BEU, *a courtier attending on Frederick.*

OLIVER, *eldest son to Sir Rowland de Boys, who had formerly been a servant to the Duke.*

JAQUES, } *Younger brothers to Oliver.*  
ORLANDO, }

ADAM, *an old servant of Sir Rowland de Boys, now following the fortunes of Orlando.*

DENNIS, *servant to Oliver.*

CHARLES, *a wrestler, and servant to the usurping Duke Frederick.*

TOUCHSTONE, *a clown attending on Celia and Rosalind.*

CORIN, } *Shepherds.*  
SYLVIVS, }

*A Clown in Love with Audrey.*

WILLIAM, *another clown in love with Audrey.*

SIR OLIVER MAR-TEXT, *a country curate.*

ROSALIND, *daughter to the Duke.*

CELIA, *daughter to Frederick.*

PHEBE, *a shepherdess.*

AUDREY, *a country wench.*

*Lords belonging to the two Dukes; with pages, foresters, and other attendants.*

*The SCENE lies, first, near OLIVER's house; and afterwards, partly in the Duke's Court; and partly in the Forest of ARDEN.*

---

# AS YOU LIKE IT.

---

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. OLIVER's Orchard.

---

*Enter ORLANDO and ADAM.*

ORLANDO.

AS I remember, *Adam*, it was upon this fashion bequeathed me by will but a poor thousand crowns; and, as thou say'st, charg'd my brother on his blessing to breed me well; and there begins my sadness. My brother *Jaques* he keeps at school, and report speaks goldenly of his profit; for my part, he keeps me rustically at home; or, (to speak more properly) stays me here at home, unkept; for call you that keeping for a gentleman of my birth, that differs not from the stalling of an ox? his horses are bred better; for, besides that they are fair with their feeding, they are taught their manage, and to that end riders dearly hired: but I, his brother, gain nothing under him but growth; for the which his animals on his dunghills are as much bound to him as I. Besides this Nothing that he so plentifully gives me, the Something, that Nature gave me, his countenance seems to take from me. He lets me feed with his hinds, bars me the place of a brother; and, as much as in him lies, mines my gentility with my education. This is it, *Adam*, that grieves me; and the spirit of my father, which, I think, is within me, begins to mutiny against this servitude. I will no longer endure it, though yet I know no wise remedy how to avoid it.

*Enter OLIVER.*

*Adam.* Yonder comes my master, your brother.

*Orla.* Go apart, *Adam*, and thou shalt hear how he will shake me up.

*Oli.* Now, Sir, what make you here?

*Orla.* Nothing: I am not taught to make any thing.

*Oli.* What mar you then, Sir?

*Orla.* Marry, Sir, I am helping you to mar that which God made; a poor unworthy brother of your's, with idleness.

*Oli.* Marry, Sir, be better employed, and be nought a while.

*Orla.* Shall I keep your hogs, and eat husks with them? what prodigal's portion have I spent, that I should come to such penury?

*Oli.* Know you where you are, Sir?

*Orla.* O, Sir, very well; here in your orchard.

*Oli.* Know you before whom, Sir?

*Orla.* Ay, better than he I am before, knows me. I know, you are my elder brother; and in the gentle condition of blood, you should know me; the courtesy of nations allows you my better, in that you are the first born; but the same tradition takes not away my blood, were there twenty brothers betwixt us. I have as much of my father in me, as you; albeit, I confess your coming before me is nearer to his reverence.

*Oli.* What, boy!

*Orla.* Come, come, elder brother, you are too young in this.

*Oli.* Wilt thou lay hands on me, villain?

*Orla.* I am no villain: I am the younger son of Sir Rowland de Boys; he was my father, and he is thrice a villain, that says, such a father begot villains. Wert thou not my brother, I would not take this hand from thy throat, 'till this other had pull'd out thy tongue for saying so; thou hast rail'd on thyself.

*Adam.* Sweet masters, be patient; for your father's remembrance, be at accord.

*Oli.* Let me go, I say.

*Orla.* I will not, 'till I please: you shall hear me. My father charg'd you in his will to give me good education; you have train'd me up like a peasant, obscuring and hiding from me all gentleman-like qualities; the spirit of my father grows strong in me, and I will no longer endure it: therefore allow me such exercise as may become a gentleman, or give me the poor allottery my father left me by testament; with that I will go buy my fortunes.

*Oli.* And what wilt thou do; beg, when that is spent? well, Sir, get you in. I will not long be troubled with you: you shall have some part of your will. I pray you, leave me.

*Orla.*



*Orla.* I will no further offend you, than becomes me for my good.

*Oli.* Get you with him, you old dog.

*Adam.* Is old dog my reward? most true, I have lost my teeth in your service. God be with my old master, he would not have spoke such a word.

[*Exit ORLANDO and ADAM.*]

*Oli.* Is it even so? begin you to grow upon me? I will physic your rankness, and yet give no thousand crowns, neither. Holla, *Dennis*!

*Enter DENNIS.*

*Den.* Calls your worship?

*Oli.* Was not *Charles*, the Duke's wrestler, here to speak with me?

*Den.* So please you, he is here at the door, and importunes access to you.

*Oli.* Call him in;—'twill be a good way; and to-morrow the wrestling is.

*Enter CHARLES.*

*Cha.* Good-morrow to your worship.

*Oli.* Good Monsieur *Charles*, what's the new news at the new Court?

*Cha.* There's no news at the Court, Sir, but the old news; that is, the old Duke is banished by his younger brother the new Duke, and three or four loving lords have put themselves into voluntary exile with him; whose lands and revenues enrich the new Duke, therefore he gives them good leave to wander.

*Oli.* Can you tell if *Rosalind*, the Duke's daughter, be banished with her father?

*Cha.* O, no; for the Duke's daughter her cousin so loves her, being ever from their cradles bred together, that she would have followed her exile, or have died to stay behind her. She is at the Court, and no less beloved of her uncle than his own daughter; and never two ladies loved as they do.

*Oli.* Where will the old Duke live?

*Cha.* They say, he is already in the forest of Arden, and a many merry men with him: and there they live like the old *Robin Hood* of England: they say, many young gentlemen

tle men flock to him every day, and fleet the time carelessly as they did in the golden world.

*Oli.* What, you wrestle to-morrow before the new Duke?

*Cha.* Marry, do I, Sir; I came to acquaint you with a matter. I am given, Sir, secretly to understand, that your younger brother *Orlando* hath a disposition to come in disguis'd against me to try a fall; to-morrow, Sir, I wrestle for my credit, and he that escapes me without some broken limb, shall acquit him well. Your brother is but young and tender, and for your love I would be loath to foil him, as I must for mine own honour, if he come in; therefore, out of my love to you, I came hither to acquaint you withal, that either you might stay him from his intendment, or brook such disgrace well as he shall run into; in that it is a thing of his own search, and altogether against my will.

*Oli.* *Charles*, I thank thee for thy love to me, which thou shalt find I will most kindly requite. I had myself notice of my brother's purpose herein, and have by underhand means laboured to dissuade him from it; but he is resolute. I tell thee, *Charles*, he is the stubbornest young fellow of France; full of ambition; an envious emulator of every man's good parts, a secret and villainous contriver against me his natural brother; therefore use thy discretion; I had as lief thou didst break his neck as his finger. And thou wert best look to't; for if thou dost him any slight disgrace; or if he do not mightily grace himself on thee, he will practise against thee by poison; entrap thee by some treacherous device; and never leave thee till he has taken thy life by some indirect means or other; for I assure thee (and almost with tears I speak it) there is not one so young and so villainous this day living. I speak but brotherly of him; but should I anatomize him to thee as he is, I must blush and weep, and thou must look pale and wonder.

*Cha.* I am heartily glad, I came hither to you: if he come to-morrow, I'll give him his payment; if ever he go alone again, I'll never wrestle for prize more; and so God keep your worship. [Exit.]

*Oli.* Farewel, good *Charles*. Now will I stir this gamester: I hope I shall see an end of him; for my soul, yet I know not why, hates nothing more than he. Yet he's gentle; never school'd, and yet learned; full of noble device, of all sorts enchantingly beloved; and, indeed, so much in the heart of the world, and especially of my own people,

people, who best know him, that I am altogether misprised. But it shall not be so long; this wrestler shall clear all; nothing remains, but that I kindle the boy thither, which now I'll go about. [Exit.]

*SCENE changes to an open Walk, before the Duke's Palace.*

*Enter ROSALIND and CELIA.*

*Cel.* I pray thee, *Rosalind*, sweet my coz, be merry.

*Ros.* Dear *Celia*, I show more mirth than I am mistress of; and would you yet I were merrier? unless you could teach me to forget a banished father, you must not learn me how to remember any extraordinary pleasure.

*Cel.* Herein I see thou lov'st me not with the full weight that I love thee. If my uncle, thy banished father, had banished thy uncle the Duke, my father, so thou hadst been still with me, I could have taught my love to take thy father for mine; so would'st thou, if the truth of thy love to me were so righteously tempered, as mine to thee.

*Ros.* Well, I will forget the condition of my estate, to rejoice in your's.

*Cel.* You know, my father hath no child but me, nor none is like to have; and, truly, when he dies, thou shalt be his heir; for what he hath taken away from thy father perforce; I will render thee again in affection; by mine honour, I will; and when I break that oath, let me turn monster: therefore, my sweet *Rose*, my dear *Rose*, be merry.

*Ros.* From henceforth I will, coz, and devise sports: let me see, what think you of falling in love?

*Cel.* Marry, I prithee do, to make sport withal; but love no man in good earnest, nor no further in sport neither, than with safety of a pure blush thou may'st in honour come off again.

*Ros.* What shall be our sport, then?

*Cel.* Let us sit and mock the good housewife, Fortune, from her wheel, that her gifts may henceforth be bestowed equally.

*Ros.* I would, we could do so; for her benefits are mightily

mightily misplaced, and the bountiful blind woman doth most mistake in her gifts to women.

*Cel.* 'Tis true; for those that she makes fair, she scarce makes honest; and those that she makes honest, she makes very ill favoured.

*Ros.* Nay, now thou goest from fortune's office to nature's: fortune reigns in gifts of the world, not in the lineaments of nature.

*Enter TOUCHSTONE, a Clown.*

*Cel.* No! when nature hath made a fair creature, may she not by fortune fall into the fire? tho' nature hath given us wit to flout at fortune, hath not fortune sent in this Fool to cut off this argument?

*Ros.* Indeed, there fortune is too hard for nature; when fortune makes nature's Natural the cutter off of nature's Wit.

*Cel.* Peradventure, this is not fortune's work neither, but nature's; who, perceiving our natural wits too dull to reason of such Goddeesses, hath sent this natural for our whetstone: for always the dulness of the fool is the whetstone of the wits. How now, Wit, whither wander you?

*Clo.* Mistress, you must come away to your father.

*Cel.* Were you made the messenger?

*Clo.* No, by mine honour; but I was bid to come for you.

*Ros.* Where learned you that oath, fool?

*Clo.* Of a certain Knight, that swore by his honour they were good pancakes, and swore by his honour the mustard was naught: Now, I'll stand to it, the pancakes were naught, and the mustard was good, and yet was not the Knight forsworn.

*Cel.* How prove you that, in the great heap of your knowledge?

*Ros.* Ay, marry; now unmuzzle your wisdom.

*Clo.* Stand you both forth now; stroke your chins, and swear by your beards that I am knave.

*Cel.* By our beards, if we had them, thou art.

*Clo.* By my knavery, if I had it, then I were; but if you swear by that that this not, you are not forsworn; no more was this Knight swearing by his honour, for he never had  
any;

any; or if he had, he had sworn it away, before ever he saw those pancakes or that mustard.

*Cel.* Pr'ythee, who is that thou mean'st?

*Clo.* One that old *Frederick*, your father, loves.

*Cel.* My father's love is enough to honour him enough; speak no more of him, you'll be whipt for taxation one of these days.

*Clo.* The more pity, that fools may not speak wisely, what wise men do foolishly.

*Cel.* By my troth, thou say'st true; for since the little wit that fools have was silenced, the little foolery that wise men have makes a great show: here comes *Monsieur Le Beau*.

*Enter LE BEU.*

*Ros.* With his mouth full of news,

*Cel.* Which he will put on us, as pigeons feed their young.

*Ros.* Then shall we be news-cram'd.

*Cel.* All the better, we shall be the more marketable, *Bon jour, Monsieur Le Beau*; what news?

*Le Beau.* Fair Princess, you have lost much good sport.

*Cel.* Sport!—of what colour?

*Le Beau.* What colour, Madam? How shall I answer you?

*Ros.* As wit and fortune will.

*Clo.* Or as the destinies decree.

*Cel.* Well said? that was laid on with a trowel.

*Clo.* Nay, if I keep not my rank,——

*Ros.* Thou losest thy old smell.

*Le Beau.* You amaze me, ladies; I would have told you of good wrestling, which you have lost the sight of.

*Ros.* Yet tell us the manner of the wrestling.

*Le Beau.* I will tell you the beginning, and, if it please your Ladyships, you may see the end, for the best is yet to do; and here, where you are, they are coming to perform it.

*Cel.* Well, the beginning that is dead and buried.

*Le Beau.* There came an old man and his three sons,——

*Cel.* I could match this beginning with an old tale.

*Le Beau.* Three proper young men, of excellent growth and presence;——

*Ros.* With bills on their necks: *Be it known unto all men by these presents.*————

*Le Beau.* The eldest of the three wrestled with *Charles*, the Duke's wrestler; which *Charles* in a moment threw, and broke three of his ribs; that there is little hope of life in him: so he served the second, and so the third; yonder they lie, the poor old man, their father, making such pitiful dole over them, that all the beholders take his part with weeping.

*Ros.* Alas!

*Clo.* But what is the sport, Monsieur, that the Ladies have lost?

*Le Beau.* Why this, that I speak of.

*Clo.* Thus men may grow wiser every day! It is the first time that ever I heard breaking of ribs was sport for ladies.

*Cel.* Or I, I promise thee.

*Ros.* But is there any else longs to set this broken music in his sides? Is there yet another dotes upon rib-breaking? Shall we see this wrestling, cousin?

*Le Beau.* You must, if you stay here, for here is the place appointed for the wrestling; and they are ready to perform it.

*Cel.* Yonder, sure, they are coming; let us now stay and see it.

*Flourish.* Enter Duke FREDERICK, Lords, ORLANDO, CHARLES, and Attendants.

*Duke.* Come on, since the youth will not be entreated: his own peril on his forwardness.

*Ros.* Is yonder the man?

*Le Beau.* Even he, Madam.

*Cel.* Alas, he is too young; yet he looks successfully.

*Duke.* How now, daughter and cousin; are you crept hither to see the wrestling?

*Ros.* Ay, my liege, so please you give us leave.

*Duke.* You will take little delight in it, I can tell you, there are such odds in the men: in pity of the challenger's youth, I would feign dissuade him, but he will not be entreated. Speak to him, ladies, see if you can move him.

*Cel.* Call him hither, good Monsieur *Le Beau*.

*Duke.*

*Duke.* Do so; I'll not be by. [*Duke goes apart.*]

*Le Duc.* Monsieur the Challenger, the Princesses call for you.

*Orla.* I attend them with all respect and duty.

*Ros.* Young man, have you challenged *Charles*, the wrestler?

*Orla.* No, fair Princess: he is the general challenger: I come but in, as others do, to try with him the strength of my youth.

*Cel.* Young gentleman, your spirits are too bold for your years: you have seen cruel proof of this man's strength. If you saw yourself with your own eyes, or knew yourself with your judgment, the fear of your adventure would counsel you to a more equal enterprise. We pray you, for your own sake, to embrace your own safety, and give over this attempt.

*Ros.* Do, young Sir; your reputation shall not therefore be misprised; we will make it our suit to the Duke that the wrestling might not go forward.

*Orla.* I beseech you, punish me not with your hard thoughts, wherein I confess me much guilty, to deny so fair and excellent ladies any thing. But let your fair eyes and gentle wishes go with me to my trial, wherein if I be foil'd, there is but one sham'd that was never gracious: if kill'd, but one dead that is willing to be so: I shall do my friends no wrong, for I have none to lament me; the world no injury, for in it I have nothing; only in the world I fill up a place, which may be better supply'd when I have made it empty.

*Ros.* The little strength that I have, I would it were with you.

*Cel.* And mine to eke out her's.

*Ros.* Fare you well; pray heav'n I be deceived in you.

*Orla.* Your heart's desires be with you.

*Cha.* Come, where is this young gallant, that is so desirous to lie with his mother earth?

*Orla.* Ready, Sir; but his will hath in it a more modest working.

*Duke.* You shall try but one fall.

*Cha.* No, I warrant your Grace, you shall not entreat him

him to a second, that have so mightily persuaded him from a first.

*Orla.* You mean to mock me after; you should not have mockt me before; but come your ways.

*Ros.* Now Hercules be thy speed, young man!

*Cel.* I would I were invisible to catch the strong fellow by the leg. [*They wrestle.*]

*Ros.* O excellent young man!

*Cel.* If I had a thunderbolt in mine eye, I can tell who should down. [*Shout.*]

*Duke.* No more, no more. [*Charles is thrown.*]

*Orla.* Yes, I beseech your Grace; I am not yet well breathed.

*Duke.* How dost thou, *Charles*?

*Le Beau.* He cannot speak, my Lord.

*Duke.* Bear him away. What is thy name, young man?

*Orla.* *Orlando*, my liege, the younger son of Sir *Rowland de Boys*.

*Duke.* I wou'd, thou hadst been son to some man else! The world esteem'd thy father honourable, But I did find him still mine enemy: Thou shouldst have better pleas'd me with this deed, Hadst thou descended from another house. But fare thee well, thou art a gallant youth; I would, thou hadst told me of another father.

[*Exit Duke with his train.*]

*Manent CELIA, ROSALIND, ORLANDO.*

*Cel.* Were I my father, coz, would I do this?

*Orla.* I am more proud to be Sir *Rowland's* son, His younger son, and would not change that callin To be adopted heir to *Frederick*.

*Ros.* My father lov'd Sir *Rowland* as his soul, And all the world was of my father's mind: Had I before known this young man his son, I should have given him tears unto entreaties, Ere he should thus have ventur'd.

*Cel.* Gentle cousin,  
Let us go thank him and encourage him;  
My father's rough and envious disposition  
Sticks me at heart. Sir, you have well deserv'd:  
If you do keep your promises in love,

But



But justly as you have exceeded all in promise,  
Your mistress shall be happy.

*Ref.* Gentleman,  
Wear this for me ; one out of suits with fortune,  
That could give more, but that her hands lack means.  
Shall we go coz ? *[Giving him a chain from her neck.*

*Cel.* Ay, fare you well, fair gentleman.

*Orla.* Can I not say, I thank you ?——my better parts  
Are all thrown down ; and that which here stands up,  
Is but a quintain, a mere lifeless block.

*Ref.* He calls us back : my pride fell with my fortunes.  
I'll ask him what he would. Did you call, Sir ?  
Sir, you have wrestled well, and overthrown  
More than your enemies.

*Cel.* Will you go, coz ?

*Ref.* Have with you : fare you well.

*[Exeunt Rosalind and Celia.*

*Orla.* What passion hangs these weights upon my tongue ?  
I cannot speak to her : yet she urged conference.

*Enter LE BEU.*

O poor *Orlando* ! thou art overthrown ;  
Or *Charles*, or something weaker, masters thee.

*Le Beau.* Good Sir, I do in friendship counsel you  
To leave this place. Albeit you have deserved  
High commendation, true applause, and love ;  
Yet such is now the Duke's condition,  
That he misconstrues all that you have done.  
The Duke is humourous ; what he is, indeed,  
More suits you to conceive, than me to speak of.

*Orla.* I thank you, Sir : and pray you, tell me this ;  
Which of the two was daughter of the Duke  
That here was at the wrestling ?

*Le Beau.* Neither his daughter, if we judge by manners ;  
But yet, indeed, the shorter is his daughter ;  
The other's daughter to the banish'd Duke,  
And here detain'd by her usurping uncle,  
To keep his daughter company ; whose loves  
Are dearer than the natural bond of sisters :  
But I can tell you, that of late this Duke  
Hath ta'en displeasure 'gainst his gentle niece ;  
Grounded upon no other argument,  
But that the people praise her for her virtues,

And

And pity her for her good father's sake ;  
 And on my life, his malice 'gainst the lady  
 Will suddenly break forth. Sir, fare you well ;  
 Hereafter, in a better world than this,  
 I shall desire more love and knowledge of you. [*Exit.*  
*Orla.* I rest much bounden to you : fare you well !  
 Thus must I from the smoke into the smother ;  
 From tyrant Duke unto a tyrant brother :  
 But heav'nly *Rosalind* !——— [*Exit.*

*SCENE changes to an Apartment in the Palace.*

*Enter CELIA and ROSALIND.*

*Cel.* Why, cousin ; why, *Rosalind* ; Cupid have mercy ; not a word.

*Ros.* Not one to throw at a dog.

*Cel.* No, thy words are too precious to cast away upon curs, throw some of them at me ! come, lame me with reasons.

*Ros.* Then there were two cousins laid up, when the one should be lamed with reasons and the other mad without any.

*Cel.* But is all this for your father ?

*Ros.* No, some of it is for my father's child. Oh, how full of briars is this working-day world !

*Cel.* They are but burs, cousin, thrown upon thee in holiday foolery ; if we walk not in the trodden paths, our very petticoats will catch them.

*Ros.* I could shake them off my coat ; these burs are in my heart.

*Cel.* Hem them away.

*Ros.* I would try, if I could cry, hem, and have him.

*Cel.* Come, come, wrestle with thy affections.

*Ros.* O, they take the part of a better wrestler than myself.

*Cel.* O, a good wish upon you ! you will try in time, in despite of a fall ;——but turning these jests out of service, let us talk in good earnest ; is it possible on such a sudden you should fall into so strong a liking with old Sir Rowland's younger son ?

*Ros.*

*Ros.* The Duke my father loved his father dearly.

*Cel.* Doth it therefore ensue, that you should love his son dearly; by this kind of chase, I should hate him; for my father hated his father dearly; yet I hate not *Orlando*.

*Ros.* No faith, hate him not, for my sake.

*Cel.* Why should I? doth he not deserve well?

*Enter DUKE, with Lords.*

*Ros.* Let me love him for that; and do you love him because I do. Look, here comes the Duke.

*Cel.* With his eyes full of anger.

*Duke.* Mistress, dispatch you with your safest haste, And get you from our court.

*Ros.* Me, uncle!

*Duke.* You, cousin.

Within these ten days if that thou be'st found  
So near our public court as twenty miles,  
Thou diest for it.

*Ros.* I do beseech your Grace,  
Let me the knowledge of my fault bear with me:  
If with myself I hold intelligence,  
Or have acquaintance with my own desires;  
If that I do not dream, or be not frantic,  
(As I do trust I am not,) then, dear uncle,  
Never so much as in a thought unborn  
Did I offend your Highness.

*Duke.* Thus do all traitors;  
If their purgation did consist in words,  
They are as innocent as grace itself:  
Let it suffice thee, that I trust thee not.

*Ros.* Yet your mistrust cannot make me a traitor;  
Tell me wherein the likelihood depends.

*Duke.* Thou art thy father's daughter, there's enough.

*Ros.* So was I, when your Highness took his dukedom;  
So was I, when your highness banish'd him;  
Treason is not inherited, my lord;  
Or if we did derive it from our friends,  
What's that to me? my father was no traitor:  
Then, good my liege, mistake me not so much,  
To think my poverty is treacherous.

*Cel.* Dear sovereign, hear me speak.

*Duke.* Ay, *Celia*, we but staid her for your sake;  
Else had she with her father rang'd along.

*Cel.*

*Cel.* I did not then entreat to have her stay;  
 It was your pleasure, and your own remorse;  
 I was too young that time to value her;  
 But now I know her! if she be a traitor,  
 Why so am I; we still have slept together,  
 Rose at an instant, learn'd, play'd, eat together;  
 And wheresoe'er we went, like Juno's swans,  
 Still we went coupled and inseparable.

*Duke.* She is too subtle for thee; and her smoothness,  
 Her very silence and her patience,  
 Speak to the people, and they pity her:  
 Thou art a fool, she robs thee of thy name,  
 And thou wilt shew more bright, and seem more virtuous,  
 When she is gone; then open not thy lips:  
 Firm and irrevocable is my doom,  
 Which I have pass'd upon her; she is banished.

*Cel.* Pronounce that sentence then on me, my liege;  
 I cannot live out of her company.

*Duke.* You are a fool: you niece, provide yourself;  
 If you out-stay the time, upon mine honour,  
 And in the greatness of my word, you die.

[*Exeunt DUKE, &c.*]

*Cel.* O my poor *Rosalind*; where wilt thou go?  
 Wilt thou change fathers! I will give thee mine:  
 I charge thee, be not thou more grieved than I am.

*Ros.* I have more cause.

*Cel.* Thou hast not cousin;  
 Pr'ythee, be cheerful; know'st thou not, the Duke  
 Has banished me his daughter?

*Ros.* That he hath not.

*Cel.* No; hath not? *Rosalind* lacks then the love,  
 Which teaches me that thou and I are one:  
 Shall we be Sundered? shall we part, sweet girl?  
 No, let my father seek another heir.

Therefore devise with me how we may fly;  
 Whither to go, and what to bear with us;  
 And do not seek to take your charge upon you,  
 To bear your griefs yourself, and leave me out:  
 For by this heaven, now at our sorrows pale,  
 Say what thou canst, I'll go along with thee.

*Ros.* Why, whither shall we go!

*Cel.* To seek my uncle in the forest of Arden.

*Ros.* Alas, what danger will it be to us,

Maids

Maids as we are, to travel forth so far!  
Beauty provoketh thieves sooner than gold.

*Cel.* I'll put myself in poor and mean attire,  
And with a kind of umber smirch my face;  
The like do you; so shall we pass along,  
And never stir assailants.

*Ros.* Were't not better,  
Because that I am more than common tall,  
That I did suit me all points like a man;  
A gallant curtle-ax upon my thigh,  
A boar-spear in my hand, (and in my heart  
Lie there what hidden woman's fears there will)  
We'll have a swashing and a martial outsize;  
As many other mannish cowards have,  
That do outface it with their semblances.

*Cel.* What shall I call thee, when thou art a man?

*Ros.* I'll have no worse a name than Jove's own page:  
And therefore, look; you call me *Ganymede*.  
But what will you be call'd?

*Cel.* Something that hath a reference to my state:  
No longer *Celia*, but *Aliena*.

*Ros.* But, cousin, what if we assaid to steal  
The clownish fool out of your father's court;  
Would he not be a comfort to our travel?

*Cel.* He'll go along o'er the wide world with me,  
Leave me alone to woo him; let's away,  
And get our jewels and our wealth together;  
Devise the fittest time, and safest way  
To hide us from pursuit that will be made  
After my flight: now go we in content  
To Liberty, and not to Banishment.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

## SCENE, ARDEN FOREST.

*Enter DUKE Senior, AMIENS, and two or three Lords like Foresters.*

*DUKE Senior.*

NOW, my co-mates, and brothers in exile,  
 Hath not old custom made this life more sweet  
 Than that of painted pomp? Are not these woods  
 More free from peril than the envious Court?  
 Here feel we but the penalty of Adam,  
 The Seasons' difference; as, the icy phang,  
 And churlish chiding of the winter's wind;  
 Which, when it bites and blows upon my body,  
 Even till I shrink with cold, I smile, and say,  
 This is no flattery: these are counsellors,  
 That feelingly persuade me what I am.  
 Sweet are the uses of Adversity,  
 Which, like the toad, ugly and venomous,  
 Wears yet a precious jewel in his head:  
 And this our life, exempt from public haunt,  
 Finds tongues in trees, books in the running brooks,  
 Sermons in stones, and good in every thing.

*Ami.* I would not change it; happy is your Grace,  
 That can translate the stubbornness of fortune  
 Into so quiet and so sweet a style.

*Duke Sen.* Come, shall we go and kill us venison?  
 And yet it irks me, the poor dappled fools,  
 Being native burghers of this desert city,  
 Should in their own confines, with forked heads  
 Have their round haunches gourd.

*1 Lord.* Indeed, my Lord,  
 The melancholy *Jaques* grieves at that;  
 And in that kind swears you do more usurp  
 Than doth your brother, that hath banish'd you:  
 To day my lord of *Amiens*, and myself,  
 Did steal behind him, as he lay along  
 Under an oak, whose antique root peeps out  
 Upon the brook that brawls along this wood;

To

To the which place a poor sequester'd stag,  
 That from the hunter's aim had ta'en a hurt,  
 Did come to languish ; and, indeed, my lord,  
 The wretched animal heav'd forth such groans  
 That their discharge did stretch his leathern coat  
 Almost to bursting ; and the big round tears  
 Cours'd one another down his innocent nose  
 In piteous chase ; and thus the hairy fool,  
 Much marked of the melancholy *Jaques*,  
 Stood on th' extreme verge of the swift brook,  
 Augmenting it with tears.

*Duke Sen.* But what said *Jaques* ;  
 Did he not moralize this spectacle ?

*1 Lord.* O yes, into a thousand families.  
 First, for his weeping in the needful stream ;  
 Poor Deer, quoth he, thou mak'st a testament  
 As worldlings do, giving thy sum of more  
 To that which had too much. Then being alone,  
 Left and abandon'd of his velvet friends ;  
 'Tis right, quoth he, thus misery doth part  
 The flux of company ; anon a careless herd,  
 Full of the pasture, jumps along by him,  
 And never stays to greet him : ay, quoth *Jaques*,  
 Sweep on, you fat and greasy citizens,  
 'Tis just the fashion : wherefore do you look  
 Upon that poor and broken bankrupt here ?  
 Thus most invectively he pierceth through  
 The body of the country, city, court ;  
 Yea, and of this our life : swearing that we  
 Are mere usurpers, tyrants, and what's worse,  
 To fright the animals, and to kill them up  
 In their assign'd and native dwelling place.

*Duke Sen.* And did you leave him in this contemplation ?

*2 Lord.* We did, my Lord, weeping and commenting  
 Upon the sobbing deer.

*Duke Sen.* Show me the place ;  
 I love to cope him in these fullen fits,  
 For then he's full of matter.

*2 Lord.* I'll bring you to him straight. [Exeunt,

*SCENE changes to the PALACE again.*

---

*Enter Duke FREDERICK, with Lords.*

*Duke.* Can it be possible, that no man saw them?  
It cannot be; some villains of my court  
Are of consent and sufferance in this.

*1 Lord.* I cannot hear of any that did see her.  
The ladies, her attendants of her chamber,  
Saw her a-bed, and in the morning early  
They found the bed untreasur'd of their mistress.

*2 Lord.* My lord, the roynish clown, at whom so oft  
Your Grace was wont to laugh, is also missing:  
*Hippelia*, the Princess' gentlewoman,  
Confesses, that she secretly o'er-heard  
Your daughter and her cousin much commend  
The parts and graces of the wrestler,  
That did but lately foil the finewy *Charles*;  
And she believes, where ever they are gone,  
That youth is surely in their company.

*Duke.* Send to his brother, fetch that gallant hither:  
If he be absent, bring his brother to me,  
I'll make him find him; do this suddenly;  
And let not search and inquisition quail  
To bring again these runaways. *[Exeunt.]*

---

*SCENE changes to OLIVER'S House.*

---

*Enter ORLANDO and ADAM.*

*Orla.* Who's there?

*Adam.* What! my young master? oh, my gentle master,  
Oh, my sweet master, O you memory  
Of old Sir *Rowland*! why, what make you here?  
Why are you virtuous? why do people love you?  
And wherefore are you gentle, strong, and valiant?  
Why should you be so fond to overcome  
The bonny Priser of the humorous Duke?  
Your praise is come too swiftly home before you.

Know



Know you not, master, to some kind of men  
 Their graces serve them but as enemies?  
 No more do yours : your virtues, gentle master,  
 Are sanctified and holy traitors to you.  
 O, what a world is this, when what is comely  
 Envenoms him that bears it!

*Orla.* Why, what's the matter?

*Adam.* O unhappy youth,  
 Come not within these doors; within this roof  
 The enemy of all your graces lives;  
 Your brother—(no; no brother; yet the son—  
 Yet not the son; I will not call him son  
 Of him I was about to call his father,)  
 Hath heard your praises, and this night he means  
 To burn the lodging where you use to lie,  
 And you within it; if he fail of that,  
 He will have other means to cut you off;  
 I overheard him, and his practices;  
 This is no place, this house is but a butchery;  
 Abhor it, fear it, do not enter it.

*Orla.* Why, whither, Adam, would'st thou have me go?

*Adam.* No matter whither, so you come not here.

*Orla.* What, would'st thou have me go and beg my food?  
 Or with a base, and boisterous sword enforce  
 A thievish living on the common road?  
 This I must do, or know not what to do:  
 Yet this I will not do, do how I can;  
 I rather will subject me to the malice  
 Of a diverted blood, and bloody brother.

*Adam.* But do not so; I have five hundred crowns,  
 The thrifty hire I sav'd under your father,  
 Which I did store, to be my foster nurse  
 When service should in my old limbs lie lame,  
 And unregarded age in corners thrown;  
 Take that: and he that doth the ravens feed,  
 Yea, providently caters for the sparrow,  
 Be comfort to my age! here is the gold,  
 All this I give you, let me be your servant;  
 Tho' I look old, yet I am strong and lusty;  
 For in my youth I never did apply  
 Hot and rebellious liquors in my blood;  
 Nor did I with unbathful forehead woo  
 The means of weakness and debility.

Therefore

Therefore my age is as a lusty winter,  
 Frosty, but kindly ; let me go with you ;  
 I'll do the service of a younger man  
 In all your business and necessities.

*Orla.* Oh ! good old man, how well in thee appears  
 The constant service of the antique world ;  
 When service sweat for duty, not for meed !  
 Thou art not for the fashion of these times,  
 Where none will sweat, but for promotion ;  
 And, having that, to choke their service up  
 Even with the having ; it is not so with thee ;  
 But, poor old man, thou prun'st a rotten tree,  
 That cannot so much as a blossom yield,  
 In lieu of all thy pains and husbandry ;  
 But come thy ways, we'll go along together ;  
 And ere we have thy youthful wages spent,  
 We'll light upon some settled low content.

*Adam.* Master, go on ; and I will follow thee  
 To the last gasp with truth and loyalty.  
 From seventeen years, 'till now almost fourscore,  
 Here liv'd I, but now live here no more.  
 At seventeen years many their fortunes seek ;  
 But at fourscore, it is too late a week ;  
 Yet fortune cannot recompense me better,  
 Than to die well, and not my master's debtor. [Exit.]

---

*SCENE changes to the FOREST of Arden.*

---

*Enter ROSALIND in Boys cloaths for GANIMEDE. CELIA  
 dress'd like a Shepherdess for ALIENA, and CLOWN.*

*Ros.* O Jupiter ! how weary are my spirits ?

*Clo.* I care not for my spirits, if my legs were not weary.

*Ros.* I could find in my heart to disgrace my man's apparel, and cry like a woman ; but I must comfort the weaker vessel, as doublet and hose ought to shew itself courageous to petticoat ; therefore, courage, good *Aliena*.

*Cel.* I pray you bear with me, I can go no further.

*Clo.*

*Cio.* For my part I had rather bear with you, than bear you; yet I should bear no cross, if I did bear you; for I think you have no money in your purse.

*Ros.* Well, this is the forest of *Arden*.

*Cio.* Aye; now I am in *Arden*, the more fool I; when I was at home, I was in a better place; but travellers must be content.

*Ros.* Aye, be so, good Mr. *Touchstone*: look you, who comes here; a young man and old in solemn talk.

*Enter CORIN and SILVIUS.*

*Cor.* That is the way to make her scorn you still.

*Sil.* O *Corin*, that thou knew'st how I do love her!

*Cor.* I partly guess; for I have lov'd ere now.

*Sil.* No, *Corin*, being old, thou canst not guess,  
Thou' in thy youth thou wast as true a lover,  
As ever sigh'd upon a midnight pillow;  
But if thy love were ever like to mine,  
(As, sure, I think, did never man love so)  
How many actions most ridiculous  
Hast thou been drawn to by thy fantasy?

*Cor.* Into a thousand that I have forgotten.

*Sil.* O, thou didst then ne'er love so heartily;  
If thou remember'st not the slightest folly,  
That ever love did make thee run into.  
Thou hast not lov'd.——

Or if thou hast not sate as I do now  
Wearying the hearer in thy mistress' praise,  
Thou hast not lov'd.——

Or if thou hast not broke from company,  
Abruptly as my passion now makes me:  
Thou hast not lov'd.——

O *Phebe*! *Phebe*! *Phebe*!

[*Exit SIL.*]

*Ros.* Alas, poor Shepherd! searching of thy wound,  
I have by hard adventure found my own.

*Cio.* And I mine; I remember when I was in love, I  
broke my sword upon a stone, and bid him take that for  
coming a nights to *Jane Smile*; and I remember the  
kissing of her batlet, and the cow's dugs that her pretty  
chopt hands had milk'd; and I remember the wooing of  
a peascod instead of her, from whom I took two cods, and  
giving her them again, said with weeping tears, wear these  
for

for my sake. We, that are true lovers, run into strange capers; but as all is mortal in nature, so is all nature in love mortal in folly.

*Ros.* Thou speak'st wiser, than thou art 'ware of.

*Clo.* Nay, I shall ne'er beware of mine own wit, till I break my shins against it.

*Ros.* *Jove! Jove!* this Shepherd's passion is much upon my fashion.

*Clo.* And mine; but it grows something stale with me.

*Cel.* I pray you, one of you question yond man,  
If he for gold will give us any food;  
I faint almost to death.

*Clo.* Holla; you, Clown!

*Ros.* Peace, fool; he's not thy kinsman.

*Cor.* Who calls?

*Clo.* Your betters, Sir.

*Cor.* Else they are very wretched.

*Ros.* Peace, I say; good even to you, friend.

*Cor.* And to you, gentle Sir, and to you all.

*Ros.* I pr'ythee, shepherd, if that love or gold  
Can in this desert place buy entertainment,  
Bring us where we may rest ourselves, and feed;  
Here's a young maid with travel much oppress'd,  
And fainted for succour.

*Cor.* Fair Sir, I pity her,  
And wish for her sake, more than for mine own,  
My fortunes were more able to relieve her;  
But I am a Shepherd to another man,  
And do not sheer the fleeces that I graze;  
My master is of churlish disposition,  
And little wrecks to find the way to heav'n  
By doing deeds of hospitality:  
Besides, his Coate, his flocks, and bounds of feed  
Are now on sale, and at our sheep-coate now,  
By reason of his absence, there is nothing  
That you will feed on; but what is, come see:  
And in my voice most welcome shall you be.

*Ros.* What is he, that shall buy his flock and pasture?

*Cor.* That young swain, that you saw here but ere while,  
That little cares for buying any thing.

*Ros.* I pray thee, if it stand with honesty,  
Buy thou the cottage, pasture and the flock,  
And thou shalt have to pay for it of us.

*Cel.*

*Cel.* And we will mend thy wages.  
I like this place, and willingly could waste  
My time in it.

*Cor.* Assuredly the thing is to be sold;  
Go with me; if you like, upon report,  
The soil, the profit, and this kind of life,  
I will your very faithful leader be;  
And buy it with your gold right suddenly. [Exeunt.]

*SCENE changes to a desert part of the FOREST.*

*Enter AMIENS, JAQUES, and others.*

S O N G.

*Ami.* Under the green-wood tree,  
Who loves to lie with me,  
And tune his merry note,  
Unto the sweet bird's throat,  
Come hither, come hither, come hither:  
Here shall he see  
No enemy,  
But winter and rough weather.

*Jaq.* More, more, I pr'ythee, more.

*Ami.* It will make you melancholy, Monsieur Jaques.

*Jaq.* I thank it; more, I pr'ythee more; I can suck  
melancholy out of a song, as a weazel sucks eggs: more I  
pr'ythee, more.

*Ami.* My voice is rugged, I know I cannot please you.

*Jaq.* I do not desire you to please me, I do desire you  
to sing; come, come, another stanza;—call you 'em stanzas?

*Ami.* What you will, Monsieur Jaques.

*Jaq.* Nay, I care not for their names, they owe me no-  
thing.—Will you sing?

*Ami.* More at your request, than to please myself.

*Jaq.* Well then, if ever I thank any man, I'll thank you;  
but that, they call Compliment, is like the encounter of  
two dog-apes. And when a man thanks me heartily, me-  
thinks, I have given him a penny, and he renders me the  
beggary thanks. Come, sing; and you that will not,  
hold your tongues.—

D

*Ami.*

*Ami.* Well, I'll end the song, Sirs; cover the while; the Duke will dine under this tree; he hath been all this day to look you.

*Jaq.* And I have been all this day to avoid him. He is too disputable for my company: I think of as many matters as he, but I give heav'n thanks, and make no boast of them. Come, warble, come.

S O N G.

*Who doth ambition shun,  
And loves to lie i' th' sun,  
Seeking the food he eats,  
And pleas'd with what he gets;  
Come hither, come hither, come hither;  
Here shall he see  
No enemy,  
But winter and rough weather.*

*Jaq.* I'll give you a verse to this note, that I made yesterday in despite of my invention.

*Ami.* And I'll sing it.

*Jaq.* Thus it goes.

*If it do come to pass,  
That any man turn ass;  
Leaving his wealth and ease  
A stubborn will to please,  
Duc ad me, duc ad me, duc ad me;  
Here shall he see  
Gross fools as he,  
An' if he will come to me.*

*Ami.* What's that *duc ad me*?

*Jaq.* 'Tis a Greek invocation, to call fools into a circle. I'll go to sleep, if I can; if I cannot, I'll rail against all the first-born of Egypt.

*Ami.* And I'll go seek the Duke: his banquet is prepar'd. [Exeunt severally.]

*Enter ORLANDO and ADAM.*

*Adam.* Dear master, I can go no further; O, I die for food! here lie I down, and measure out my grave. Farewel, kind master.

*Orla.*

*Orla.* Why, how now, *Adam*! no greater heart in thee? live a little; comfort a little; cheer thyself a little. If this uncouth forest yield any thing savage, I will either be food for it, or bring it for food to thee: thy conceit is nearer death than thy powers. For my sake be comfortable, hold death awhile at the arm's end: I will be here with thee presently, and if I bring thee not something to eat, I'll give thee leave to die. But if thou diest before I come, thou art a mocker of my labour. Well said, thou look'st cheerly; and I'll be with thee quickly; yet thou liest in the bleak air. Come, I will bear thee to some shelter, and thou shalt not die for lack of a dinner, if there live any thing in this desert. Cheerly, good *Adam*! [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter DUKE Sen. and Lords.* [*A table set out.*]

*Duke Sen.* I think he is transformed into a beast,  
For I can no where find him like a man.

*I Lord.* My Lord, he is but even now gone hence:  
Here was he merry, hearing of a song.

*Duke Sen.* If he compact of jars, grow musical,  
We shall have shortly discord in the spheres.  
Go, seek him; tell him, I would speak with him.

*Enter JAQUES.*

*I Lord.* He saves my labour by his own approach.

*Duke Sen.* Why, how now, Monsieur, what a life is this,  
That your poor friends must woo your company?  
What! you look merrily!

*Jaq.* A fool, a fool!——I met a fool i'th' forest,  
A motley fool; a miserable world!

As I do live by food, I met a fool;  
Who laid him down, and bask'd him in the sun,  
And rail'd on Lady Fortune in good terms,  
In good set terms, and yet a motley fool.

Good-morrow fool, quoth I; No, Sir, quoth he,  
Call me not fool, 'till heaven hath sent me fortune;  
And then he drew a dial from his poak,  
And looking on it with lack-lustre eye,  
Says very wisely, it is ten o'clock:

Thus may we see, quoth he, how the world wags:

'Tis but an hour ago, since it was nine,  
 And after one hour more 'twill be eleven;  
 And so from hour to hour, we ripe and ripe,  
 And then from hour to hour, we rot and rot,  
 And thereby hangs a tale. When I did hear  
 The motley fool thus moral on the time,  
 My lungs began to crow like chanticleer,  
 That fools should be so deep contemplative:  
 And I did laugh, sans intermission,  
 An hour by his dial.—O noble fool,  
 A worthy fool! motley's the only wear.

*Duke Sen.* What fool is this?

*Jaq.* O worthy fool! one that hath been a courtier,  
 And says, if ladies be but young and fair,  
 They have the gift to know it: and in his brain,  
 Which is as dry as the remainder bisket  
 After a voyage, he hath strange places cram'd  
 With observation, the which he vents  
 In mangled forms. O that I were a fool,  
 I am ambitious for a motley coat.

*Duke Sen.* Thou shalt have one.

*Jaq.* It is my only suit;  
 Provided, that you weed your better judgments  
 Of all opinion, that grows rank in them,  
 That I am wise. I must have liberty  
 Withal, as large a charter as the wind,  
 To blow on whom I please; for so fools have;  
 And they that are most galled with my folly,  
 They most must laugh: and why, Sir, must they so?  
 The why is plain, as way to parish church;  
 He, whom a fool doth very wisely hit,  
 Doth very foolishly, although he smart,  
 Not to seem senseless of the bob. If not,  
 The wise man's folly is anatomiz'd  
 Even by the squand'ring glances of the fool.  
 Invest me in my motley, give me leave  
 To speak my mind, and I will through and through  
 Cleanse the foul body of th' infected world,  
 If they will patiently receive my medicine.

*Duke Sen.* Fie on thee! I can tell what thou wouldst do.

*Jaq.* What for a counter, would I do but good?

*Duke Sen.* Most mischievous foul sin, in chiding sin;  
 For thou thyself hast been a libertine,

As



As sensual as the brutish sting itself;  
 And all the embossed sores and headed evils,  
 That thou with licence of free foot has caught,  
 Wouldst thou disgorge into the general world.

*Jaq.* Why, who cries out on pride,  
 That can therein tax any private party?  
 Doth it not flow as hugely as the sea,  
 'Till that the very means do ebb?  
 What woman in the city do I name,  
 When that I say, the city-woman bears  
 The cost of Princes on unworthy shoulders?  
 Who can come in, and say, that I mean her;  
 When such a one as she, such is her neighbour.  
 Or what is he of basest function,  
 That says his bravery is not on my cost;  
 Thinking, that I mean him; but therein suits  
 His folly to the metal of my speech?  
 There then; how then? what then? let me see wherein  
 My tongue hath wrong'd him; if it do him right,  
 Then he hath wrong'd himself; if he be free,  
 Why then my taxing, like a wild-goose, flies  
 Unclaimed of any man. But who comes here?

*Enter ORLANDO, with his sword drawn.*

*Orla.* Forbear, and eat no more.——

*Jaq.* Why, I have eat none yet.

*Orla.* Nor shalt thou 'till necessity be served.

*Jaq.* Of what kind should this cock come of?

*Duke Sen.* Art thou thus bolden'd man by thy distress?  
 Or else a rude despiser of good manners,  
 That in civility thou seem'st so empty?

*Orla.* You touch'd my vein at first; the thorny point  
 Of bare distress has ta'en from me the shew  
 Of smooth civility; yet am I inland bread,  
 And know some nurture: but forbear, I say:  
 He dies that touches any of this fruit,  
 'Till I and my affairs are answered.

*Jaq.* If you will not  
 Be answered with reason, I must die.

*Duke Sen.* What would you have? Your gentleness  
 shall force,

More than your force move us to gentleness.

*Orla.* I almost die for food, and let me have it.

*Duke.*

AS YOU LIKE IT.

*Duke Sen.* Sit down and feed, and welcome to our table.

*Orla.* Speak you so gently? pardon me, I pray you;  
I thought that all things had been savage here;  
And therefore put I on the countenance  
Of stern commandment. But whate'er you are,  
That in this desert inaccessible,  
Under the shade of melancholy boughs,  
Lose and neglect the creeping hours of time;  
If ever you have look'd on better days;  
If ever been where bells have knoll'd to church;  
If ever sat at any good man's feast;  
If ever from your eye-lids wip'd a tear,  
And know what 'tis to pity and be pitied;  
Let gentleness my strong enforcement be,  
In the which hope I blush, and hide my sword.

*Duke Sen.* True is it, that we have seen better days;  
And have with holy bell been knoll'd to church;  
And sat at good men's feasts; and wip'd our eyes  
Of drops that sacred pity hath engender'd:  
And therefore sit you down in gentleness,  
And take upon command what help we have,  
That to your wanting may be ministered.

*Orla.* Then but forbear your food a little while,  
Whiles, like a doe, I go to find my fawn,  
And give it food. There is an old poor man,  
Who after me hath many a weary step  
Limp'd in pure love; 'till he be first sufficed,  
Oppress'd with two weak evils, age and hunger,  
I will not touch a bit.

*Duke Sen.* Go find him out,  
And we will nothing waste till you return.

*Orla.* I thank ye; and be blest'd for your good com-  
fort! [Exit.]

*Duke Sen.* Thou seest, we are not all alone unhappy:  
This wide and universal Theatre  
Presents more woeful pageants, than the scene  
Wherein we play in.

*Jaq.* All the world's a stage,  
And all the men and women merely players;  
They have their *Exits* and their entrances,  
And one man in his time plays many parts:  
His acts being seven ages. At first the infant,  
Mewling and puking in the nurse's arms:

And

AS YOU LIKE IT.

And then the whining school-boy, with his fatchel,  
 And shining morning-face, creeping like snail,  
 Unwillingly to school. And then, the lover;  
 Sighing like furnace with a woeful ballad  
 Made to his mistress' eye-brow. Then, a soldier,  
 Full of strange oaths and bearded like the pard,  
 Jealous in honour, sudden and quick in quarrel,  
 Seeking the bubble reputation  
 Even in the cannon's mouth. And then, the justice  
 In fair round belly with good capon lin'd,  
 With eyes severe, and beard of formal cut,  
 Full of wise saws and modern instances,  
 And so he plays his part. The sixth age shifts  
 Into the lean and slipper'd pantaloon,  
 With spectacles on nose, and pouch on side;  
 His youthful hose well sav'd a world too wide  
 For his shrunk shank; and his big manly voice,  
 Turning again toward childish treble, pipes  
 And whistles in his sound. Last scene of all,  
 That ends this strange eventful history,  
 Is second childishness, and mere oblivion,  
 Sans teeth, sans eyes, sans taste, sans every thing.

*Enter ORLANDO, with ADAM.*

*Duke Sen.* Welcome : set down your venerable burden,  
 And let him feed.

*Orla.* I thank you most for him.]

*Adam.* So had you need,  
 I scarce can speak to thank you for myself.

*Duke Sen.* Welcome, fall to : I will not trouble you,  
 As yet to question you about your fortunes.  
 Give us some music ; and good cousin, sing.

S O N G.

*Ami.* *Blow, blow, thou winter wind,  
 Thou art not so unkind  
 As man's ingratitude ;  
 Thy tooth is not so keen,  
 Because thou art not seen,  
 Altho' thy breath be rude.*

*Heigh*

*Heigh ho! sing, heigh ho! unto the green holly;  
 Most friendship is feigning; most loving mere folly:  
 Then heigh ho, the holly!  
 This life is most jolly.*

*Freeze, freeze, thou bitter sky,  
 Thou dost not bite so nigh  
 As benefits forget:  
 Tho' thou the waters warp,  
 Thy sting is not so sharp  
 As friend remembered not.  
 Heigh ho! sing, &c.*

*Duke Sen.* If that you were the good Sir Rowland's son,  
 As you have whisper'd faithfully you were,  
 And as mine eye doth his effigies witness,  
 Most truly limm'd and living in your face,  
 Be truly welcome hither. I am the Duke,  
 That lov'd your father: The residue of your fortune,  
 Go to my cave and tell me. Good old man,  
 Thou art right welcome, as thy master is;  
 Support him by the arm; give me your hand,  
 And let me all your fortunes understand. [*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III.

#### SCENE, the PALACE,

*Enter DUKE, Lords, and OLIVER.*

DUKE.

NOT see him since? Sir, Sir, that cannot be:  
 But were I not the better part made mercy,  
 I should not seek an absent argument  
 Of my revenge, thou present: but look to it;  
 Find out thy brother, wherefoe'er he is;  
 Seek him with candle: bring him dead or living,  
 Within this twelvemonth; or turn thou no more  
 To seek a living in our territory.

Thy

Thy lands and all things that thou dost call thine,  
 Worth seizure, do we seize into our hands;  
 'Till thou canst quit thee by thy brother's mouth,  
 Of what we think against thee.

*Ol.* Oh, that your Highness knew my heart in this:  
 I never lov'd my brother in my life.

*Duke.* More villian thou. Well, push him out of doors;  
 And let my officers of such a nature  
 Make an extent upon his house and lands:  
 Do this expediently, and turn him going. [Exeunt.

*SCENE changes to the FOREST.*

*Enter ORLANDO.*

*Orla.* Hang there, my verse, in witness of my love;  
 And thou thrice-crowned Queen of night survey,  
 With thy chaste eye, from thy pale sphere above,  
 Thy huntress' name that my full life doth sway.

O *Rosalind*! these trees shall be my books,  
 And in their barks my thoughts I'll character;  
 That every eye, which in this forest looks,  
 Shall see thy virtue witness'd every where.

Run, run, *Orlando*, carve, on every tree,  
 The fair, the chaste, and unexpressive she! [Exit.

*Enter CORIN and CLOWN.*

*Cor.* And how like you this shepherd's life, Mr. Touch-  
 Stone?

*Clo.* Truly, shepherd, in respect of itself, it is a good  
 life; but in respect that it is a shepherd's life, it is naught.  
 In respect that it is solitary, I like it very well: but in  
 respect that it is private, it is a very vile life. Now, in  
 respect it is in the fields, it pleaseth me well; but in re-  
 spect it is not in the Court, it is tedious. As it is a spare  
 life, look you, it fits my temper well; but as there is no  
 more plenty in it, it goes against my stomach. Hast any  
 philosophy in thee, shepherd?

*Cor.* No more, but that I know, the more one sickens,  
 the worse at ease he is: and that he, that wants money,

means, and content, is without three good friends. That the property of rain is to wet, and fire to burn : that good pasture makes fat sheep ; and that a great cause of the night, is the lack of the sun : that he, who hath learned no wit by nature nor art, may complain of good breeding, or comes of a very dull kindred.

*Clo.* Such a one is a natural philosopher. Wast ever at Court, shepherd?

*Cor.* No, truly.

*Clo.* Then thou art damn'd.

*Cor.* Nay, I hope——

*Clo.* Truly, thou art damn'd, like an ill-roasted egg, all on one side.

*Cor.* For not being at Court? your reason.

*Clo.* Why, if thou never wast at Court, thou never saw'st good manners : if thou never saw'st good manners, then thy manners must be wicked ; and wickedness is sin, and sin is damnation : thou art in a parlous state, shepherd.

*Cor.* Not a whit, *Touchstone* ; those, that are good manners at the Court, are as ridiculous in the country as the behaviour of the country is most mockable at the Court. You told me, you salute not at the Court, but you kiss your hands ; that courtesy would be uncleanly, if courtiers were shepherds.

*Clo.* Instance, briefly ; come, instance.

*Cor.* Why, we are still handling our ewes ; and their fells, you know, are greasy.

*Clo.* Why do not your courtiers' hands sweat ? and is not the grease of a mutton as wholesome as the sweat of a man ? shallow, shallow ;——a better instance, I say ; come.

*Cor.* Besides, our hands are hard.

*Clo.* Your lips will feel them the sooner. Shallow again——a more sounder instance, come.

*Cor.* And they are often tarr'd over with the surgery of our sheep ; and would you have us kiss tar ? the courtiers hands are perfum'd with civet.

*Clo.* Most shallow man ! thou worms-meat, in respect of a good piece of flesh, indeed ! learn of the wise, and perpend ; civet is of a baser birth than tar ; the very uncleanly flux of a cat. Mend the instance, shepherd.

*Cor.* You have too courtly a wit for me ; I'll rest.

*Clo.*

*Cl.* Wilt thou rest damn'd? God help thee, shallow man; God make incision in thee, thou art raw.

*Cor.* Sir, I am a true labourer, I earn that I eat; get that I wear; owe no man hate, envy no man's happiness; glad of other men's good; content with my harm; and the greatest of my pride is to see my ewes graze, and my lambs suck.

*Cl.* That is another simple sin in you, to bring the ewes and rams together; and to offer to get your living by the copulation of cattle; to be a bawd to a bell-weather; and to betray a she-lamb of a twelvemonth to a crooked perjur'd old cuckoldly ram, out of all reasonable match. If thou be'st not damn'd for this, the devil himself will have no shepherds; I cannot see else how thou should'st scape.

*Cor.* Here comes young Mr. *Ganymed*, my new mistress's brother.

*Enter ROSALIND, with a paper.*

*Ros.* From the east to western Inde,  
No jewel is like Rosalind.  
Her worth, being mounted on the wind,  
Through all the world bears Rosalind,  
All the pictures, fairest lin'd  
Are but black to Rosalind.  
Let no face be kept in mind,  
But the face of Rosalind.

*Cl.* I'll rhyme you so, eight years together; dinners, and suppers; and sleeping hours excepted: it is the right butter women's rank to market.

*Ros.* Out, fool!

*Cl.* For a taste.—

*If a hart doth lack a hind,  
Let him seek out Rosalind.  
If the cat will after kind,  
So, be sure, will Rosalind.  
Winter-garments must be lin'd,  
So must slender Rosalind,  
They that reap, must sheaf and bind;  
Then to cart with Rosalind.*

*Sweetest nut hath sowereſt rind,  
Such a nut is Roſalind.  
He that ſweeteſt roſe will find.  
Muſt find love'e prick, and Roſalind.*

This is the very falſe gallop of verſes ; why do you infect yourſelf with them ?

*Rof.* Peace, you dull fool, I found them on a tree.

*Clo.* Truly, the tree yields bad fruit.

*Rof.* I'll graff it with you, and then I'll graff it with a medler ; then it will be the earlieſt fruit i' th' country ; for you will be rotten ere you be half ripe, and that's the right virtue of the medler.

*Clo.* You have ſaid ; but whether wiſely or no, let the foreſt judge.

*Enter CELIA, with a writing.*

*Rof.* Peace, here comes my ſiſter, reading : ſtand aſide.

*Cel.* *Why ſhould this a deſert be,  
For it is unpeopl'd? No ;  
Tongues I'll hang on every tree,  
That ſhall civil ſayings ſhow.  
Some, how brief the life of man  
Runs his erring pilgrimage ;  
That the ſtretching of a ſpan  
Buckles in his ſum of age ;  
Some of violated vows,  
'Twixt the ſouls of friend and friend ;  
But upon the faireſt boughs,  
Or at every ſentence end,  
Will I Roſalinda write ;  
Teaching all, that read, to know,  
This quinteſſence of every ſprite,  
Heaven would in little ſhow ;  
Therefore heaven nature chang'd,  
That one body ſhould be fill'd  
With all graces wide enlarg'd ;  
Nature preſently diſtill'd  
Helen's cheeks, but not her heart,  
Cleopatra's majeſty ;  
Atalanta's better part ;  
Sad Lucretia's modeſty.*

*Thus*



*Thus Rosalind of many parts  
 By heav'nly synod was devis'd;  
 Of many faces, eyes and hearts,  
 To have the touches dearest priz'd.  
 Heav'n would that she these gifts should have,  
 And I to live and die her slave.*

*Ros.* O most gentle *Jupiter*!—what tedious homily of love have you wearied your parishioners withal, and never cry'd,—Have patience, good people!

*Cel.* How now? back friends! shepherd, go off a little: go with him, firrah.

*Glo.* Come, shepherd, let us make an honourable retreat; tho' not with bag and baggage, yet with scrip and scrippage. [*Exeunt Corin and Clown.*]

*Cel.* Didst thou hear these verses?

*Ros.* O yes, I heard them all, and more too; for some of them had in them more feet than the verses would bear.

*Cel.* That's no matter; the feet might bear the verses.

*Ros.* Ay, but the feet were lame, and could not bear themselves without the verse, and therefore stood lamely in the verse.

*Cel.* But didst thou hear without wondering, how thy name should be hang'd and carv'd upon these trees?

*Ros.* I was seven of the nine days out of wonder, before you came; for, look here, what I found on a palm-tree; I was never so be-rhimed since *Pythagoras's* time, that I was an *Irish* rat, which I can hardly remember.

*Cel.* Trow you, who hath done this?

*Ros.* Is it a man?

*Cel.* And a chain, that you once wore, about his neck: Change you colour?

*Ros.* I pr'ythee, who?

*Cel.* O Lord, Lord, it is a hard matter for friends to meet; but mountains may be removed with earthquakes, and so encounter.

*Ros.* Nay, but who is it?

*Cel.* Is it possible?

*Ros.* Nay, I pr'ythee now, with most petitionary vehemence, tell me who it is.

*Cel.* O wonderful, wonderful, and yet most wonderful, wonder-

wonderful, and yet again wonderful, and after that out of all whooping——

*Ref.* Good, my complexion ! dost thou think, though I am caparison'd like a man, I have a doublet and hose in my disposition ? One inch of delay more is a South-Sea off discovery. I pr'ythee tell me, who is it ; quickly, and speak apace : I would thou couldst stammer, that thou might'st pour this concealed man out of thy mouth, as wine comes out of a narrow-mouth'd bottle ; either too much at once, or none at all. I pr'ythee, take the cork out of thy mouth, that I may drink thy tidings.

*Cel.* So you may put a man in your belly.

*Ref.* Is he of God's making ; what manner of man ? is his head worth a hat, or his chin worth a beard ?

*Cel.* Nay, he hath but a little beard.

*Ref.* Why, God will send more, if the man will be thankful ; let me stay the growth of his beard, if thou delay me not the knowledge of his chin.

*Cel.* It is young *Orlando*, that tripp'd up the wrestler's heels and your heart both in an instant.

*Ref.* Nay, but the devil take mocking ; speak, sad brow, and true maid.

*Cel.* I'faith, coz, 'tis he.

*Ref.* *Orlando !*

*Cel.* *Orlando.*

*Ref.* Alas the day, what shall I do with my doublet and hose ? what did he, when thou saw'st him ? what said he ? how look'd he ? wherein went he ? what makes he here ? did he ask for me ? where remains he ? how parted he with thee ? and when shalt thou see him again ? answer me in one word.

*Cel.* You must borrow me *Garagantua's* mouth first ; 'tis a word too great for any man of this age's size : to say, ay, and no, to these particulars, is more than to answer in a catechism.

*Ref.* But doth he know that I am in this forest, and in man's apparel ? looks he as freshly as he did the day he wrestled ?

*Cel.* It is as easy to count atoms, as to resolve the propositions of a lover : but take a taste of my finding him, and relish it with good observance. I found him under a tree, like a dropp'd acorn,

*Ref.*

*Ros.* It may well be called *Jove's tree*, when it drops forth such fruit.

*Cel.* Give me audience, good Madam.

*Ros.* Proceed.

*Cel.* There lay he stretch'd along like a wounded Knight.

*Ros.* Tho' it be pity to see such a sight, it well becomes the ground.

*Cel.* Cry, holla! to thy tongue, I pr'ythee; it curvets unseasonably. He was furnished like a hunter.

*Ros.* Oh, ominous; he comes to kill my heart.

*Cel.* I would sing my song without a burden; thou bring'st me out of tune.

*Ros.* Do you not know I am a woman? when I think, I must speak? Sweet, say on.

*Enter ORLANDO and JAQUES.*

*Cel.* You bring me out. Soft, comes he not here?

*Ros.* 'Tis he; flink by, and note him.

[*Celia and Rosalind, retire.*]

*Jaq.* I thank you for your company; but good faith, I had as lief have been myself alone.

*Orla.* And so had I; but yet for fashion sake, I thank you too for your society.

*Jaq.* God b'w' you, let's meet as little as we can.]

*Orla.* I do desire we may be better strangers.

*Jaq.* I pray you, marr no more trees with writing love songs in their barks.

*Orla.* I pray you marr no more of my verses with reading them ill-favouredly.

*Jaq.* *Rosalind*, is your love's name?

*Orla.* Yes, just.

*Jaq.* I do not like her name.

*Orla.* There was no thought of pleasing you, when she was christen'd.

*Jaq.* What stature is she of?

*Orla.* Just as high as my heart.

*Jaq.* You are full of pretty answers; have you not been acquainted with goldsmiths wives, and conn'd them out of rings?

*Orla.* Not so: but I answer you right painted cloth, from whence you have studied your questions.

*Jaq.*

*Jaq.* You have a nimble wit; I think, it was made of *Atalanta's* heels. Will you sit down with me, and we two will rail against our mistress, the world, and all our misery.

*Orla.* I will chide no breather in the world but myself, against whom I know most faults.

*Jaq.* The worst fault you have is to be in love.

*Orla.* 'Tis a fault I would not change for your best virtue; I am weary of you.

*Jaq.* By my troth, I was seeking for a fool, when I found you.

*Orla.* He is drown'd in the brook; look but in, and you shall see him.

*Jaq.* There I shall see mine own figure.

*Orla.* Which I take to be either a fool, or a cypher.

*Jaq.* I'll stay no longer with you; farewell, good Signior Love! [Exit.]

*Orla.* I am glad of your departure; adieu, good Monsieur Melancholy! [Cel. and Ros. come forward.]

*Ros.* I will speak to him like a faucy lacquey, and under that habit play the knave with him: do you hear, forester?

*Orla.* Very well; what would you?

*Ros.* I pray you, what is't o'clock?

*Orla.* You should ask me, what time o'day; there's no clock in the forest.

*Ros.* Then there is no true lover in the forest; else, sighing every minute, and groaning every hour, would detect the lazy foot of time, as well as a clock.

*Orla.* And why not the swift foot of time? had not that been as proper?

*Ros.* By no means, Sir: time travels in divers paces, with divers persons; I'll tell you who Time ambles withal, who Time trots withal, who Time gallops withal, and who he stands still withal.

*Orla.* I prythee whom doth he trot withal?

*Ros.* Marry, he trots hard with a young maid, between the contract of her marriage, and the day it is solemniz'd: if the interim be but a se'nnight, Time's pace is so hard that it seems the length of seven years.

*Orla.* Who ambles Time withal?

*Ros.* With a priest that lacks *Latin*, and a rich man that hath

hath not the gout ; for the one sleeps easily, because he cannot study ; and the other lives merrily, because he feels no pain : the one lacking the burden of lean and wasteful learning ; the other knowing no burden of heavy, tedious penury. These Time ambles withal.

*Orla.* Whom doth he gallop withal ?

*Ref.* With a thief to the gallows : for though he go as softly as foot can fall, he thinks himself to soon there.

*Orla.* Whom stays it still withal ?

*Ref.* With lawyers in the vacation ; for they sleep between term and term, and then they perceive not how Time moves.

*Orla.* Where dwell you, pretty youth ?

*Ref.* With this shepherdes, my sister ; here in the skirts of the forest, like fringe upon a petticoat.

*Orla.* Are you a native of this place ?

*Ref.* As the cony, that you see dwell where she is kindled.

*Orla.* Your accent is something finer than you could purchase in so removed a dwelling.

*Ref.* I have been told so of many ; but, indeed, an old religious uncle of mine taught me to speak, who was in his youth an in-land man, one that knew courtship too well ; for there he fell in love. I have heard him read many lectures against it ; and I thank God I am not a woman, to be touch'd with so many giddy offences as he hath generally tax'd their whole sex withal.

*Orla.* Can you remember any of the principal evils, that he laid to the charge of women ?

*Ref.* There were none principal, they were all like one another, as halfpence are ; every one fault seeming monstrous, till his fellow-fault came to match it.

*Orla.* I pr'ythee, recount some of them.

*Ref.* No ; I will not cast away my physick, but on those that are sick. There is a man haunts the forest, that abuses our young plants with carving *Rosalind* on their barks ; hangs odes upon hawthorns, and elegies on brambles ; all, forsooth, deifying the name of *Rosalind*. If I could meet that fancy-monger, I would give him some good counsel, for he seems to have the Quotidian of love upon him.

*Orla.* I am he, that is so love-shak'd; I pray you, tell me your remedy.

*Ros.* There is none of my uncle's marks upon you; he taught me how to know a man in love; in which cage of rushes, I am sure you are not prisoner.

*Orla.* What were his marks?

*Ros.* A lean cheek, which you have not; a blue eye and sunken, which you have not; an unquestionable spirit, which you have not; a beard neglected, which you have not;——but I pardon you for that, for simply your having in beard is a younger brother's revenue:—then your hose should be ungartered, your bonnet unbanded, your sleeve unbutton'd, your shoe unty'd, and every thing about you demonstrating a careless desolation; but you are no such man, you are rather point-device in your accoutrements, as loving yourself, than seeming the lover of any other.

*Orla.* Fair youth, I would I could make thee believe I love.

*Ros.* Me believe it! you may as soon make her, that you love, believe it; which I warrant she is apter to do, than to confess she does; that is one of the points, in the which women still give the lye to their consciences. But, in good sooth, are you he that hangs the verses on the trees, wherein *Rosalind* is so admired?

*Orla.* I swear to thee, youth, by the white hand of *Rosalind*, I am that he, that unfortunate he!

*Ros.* But are you so much in love, as your rhimes speak?

*Orla.* Neither rhyme nor reason can express how much.

*Ros.* Love is merely a madness, and, I tell you, deserves as well a dark house and a whip, as mad men do: and the reason why they are not so punish'd and cured, is that the lunacy is so ordinary, that the whippers are in love too: yet I profess curing it by counsel.

*Orla.* Did you ever cure any so?

*Ros.* Yes, one, and in this manner. He was to imagine me his love, his mistress: and I set him every day to woo me. At which time would I, being but a moonish youth, grieve, be effeminate, changeable, longing, and liking; proud, fantastical, apish, shallow, inconstant, full of tears,  
full

full of smiles: for every passion something, and for no passion truly any thing, as boys and women are for the most part cattle of this colour; would now like him, now loth him; then entertain him, then forswear him; now weep for him, then spit at him; that I drove my suitor from his mad humour of love to a living humour of madness; which was to forswear the full stream of the world, and to live in a nook merely monastick; and thus I cur'd him, and this way will I take upon me to wash your liver as clean as a sound sheep's heart, that there shall not be one spot of love in't.

*Orla.* I would not be cur'd, youth.

*Ref.* I would cure you, if you would but call me *Rosalind*, and come every day to my cot, and woo me.

*Orla.* Now by the faith of my love, I will; tell me where it is.

*Ref.* Go with me to it, and I will shew it you; and, by the way, you shall tell me where in the forest you live: Will you go?

*Orla.* With all my heart, good youth.

*Ref.* Nay, nay, you must call me *Rosalind*: come, sister, will you go? [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter CLOWN, and AUDREY. JACQUES watching them.*

*Clo.* Come apace, good *Audrey*, I will fetch up your goats, *Audrey*; and now, *Audrey*, am I the man yet? doth my simple feature content you?

*Aud.* Your features, Lord warrant us! what features?

*Clo.* I am here with thee and thy goats, as the most capricious poet, honest *Ovid*, was among the *Goths*.

*Jaq.* (*Aside.*) O knowledge ill-inhabited, worse than *Jove* thatch'd house!

*Clo.* When a man's verses cannot be understood, nor a man's good wit seconded with the forward child, Understanding; it strikes a man more dead than a great reckoning in a little room; truly, I would, the Gods had made thee poetical.

*Aud.* I do not know what poetical is; is it honest in deed and word? is it a true thing?

*Clo.* No, truly; for the truest poetry is the most feigning; and lovers are given to poetry; and what they swear in poetry, may be said, as lovers, they do feign.

*Aud.* Do you wish then, that the Gods had made me poetical?

*Cl.* I do, truly; for thou swear'st to me, thou art honest; now if thou wert a poet, I might have some hope thou didst feign.

*Aud.* Would you not have me honest?

*Cl.* No, truly; unless thou wert hard-favour'd; for honesty coupled to beauty, is, to have honey a sauce to fugar.

*Jaq.* [*Aside.*] A material fool!

*Aud.* Well, I am not fair; and therefore I pray the Gods make me honest!

*Cl.* Truly, and to cast away honesty upon a foul slut, were to put good meat into an unclean dish.

*Aud.* I am not a slut, though I thank the gods I am foul.

*Cl.* Well praised be the Gods for thy foulness! fluttishness may come hereafter; but be it as it may be, I will marry thee; and to that end I have been with Sir Oliver Mar-text, the vicar of the next village, who hath promis'd to meet me in this place o'th forest, and to couple us.

*Jaq.* [*Aside*] I would fain see this meeting.

*Aud.* Well, the Gods give us joy!

*Cl.* Amen. A man may, if he were of a fearful heart, stagger in this attempt; for here we have no temple but the wood, no assembly but horn-beasts. But what tho'! courage. As horns are odious, they are necessary. It is said, many a man knows no end of his goods. right; many a man has good horns, and knows no end of them. Well, that is the dowry of his wife, 'tis none of his own getting; horns? even so——poor men alone?——no, no the noblest deer hath them as huge as the rascal: is the single man therefore blessed? no. As a wall'd town is more worthier than a village, so is the forehead of a married man more honourable than the bare brow of a bachelor; and by how much defence is better than no skill, so much is a horn more precious than to want.

*Enter Sir OLIVER MAR-TEXT.*

Here comes Sir Oliver: Sir Oliver Mar-text, you are well met. Will you dispatch us here under this tree, or shall we go with you to your chapel?

*Sir Oli.*



*Sir Oli.* Is there none here to give the woman?

*Clo.* I will not take her on the gift of any man.

*Sir Oli.* Truly, she must be given, or the marriage is not lawful.

*Jaq.* [*Discovering himself.*] Proceed, proceed! I'll give her.

*Clo.* Good even, good master *What ye call't*: how do you, Sir? you are very well met: God'ild you for your last company! I am very glad to see you; even a toy in hand here, Sir:—nay, pray be covered.

*Jaq.* Will you be married, *Motley*?

*Clo.* As the ox hath his bow, Sir, the horse his curb, and the falcon his bells, so man hath his desires; and as pigeons bill, so wedlock would be nibbling.

*Jaq.* And will you, being a man of your breeding, be married under a bush like a beggar? get you to church, and have a good priest that can tell you what marriage is; this fellow will but join you together as they join wain-scot; then one of you will prove a shrunk pannel, and, like green timber, warp, warp!

*Clo.* I am not in the mind, but I were better to be married of him than of another; for he is not like to marry me well; and not being well married, it will be a good excuse for me hereafter to leave my wife.

*Jaq.* Go thou with me, and let me counsel thee.

*Clo.* Come, sweet *Audrey*, we must be married, or we must live in bawdry: farewell, good Sir *Oliver*; not O sweet *Oliver*, O brave *Oliver*, leave me not behind thee, but wind away, begone, I say, I will not to wedding with thee.

*Sir Oli.* 'Tis no matter; ne'er a fantastical knave of them all shall flout me out of my calling. [*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE changes to a Cottage in the Forest.*

*Enter ROSALIND and CELIA.*

*Ref.* Never talk to me, I will weep.

*Cel.* Do, I prythee, but yet have the grace to consider, that tears do not become a man.

*Ref.* But have I not cause to weep?

*Cel.* As good cause as one would desire, therefore weep.  
*Ref.*

*Ref.* His very hair is of the dissembling colour.

*Cel.* Something browner than *Judas's*: marry, his kisses are *Judas's* own children.

*Ref.* I'faith his hair is of a good colour.

*Cel.* An excellent colour: your chestnut was ever the only colour.

*Ref.* And his kissing is as full of sanctity, as the touch of holy Beard.

*Cel.* He hath bought a pair of cast lips of *Diana*, a nun of Winter's sisterhood kisses not more religiously; the very ice of chastity is in them.

*Ref.* But why did he swear he would come this morning, and comes not?

*Cel.* Nay, certainly, there is no truth in him.

*Ref.* Do you think so?

*Cel.* Yes; I think he is not a pick-purse nor a horse-stealer: but for his verity in love, I do think him as concave as a cover'd goblet, or a worm-eaten nut.

*Ref.* Not true in love?

*Cel.* Yes, when he is in; but, I think, he is not in.

*Ref.* You have heard him swear downright, he was.

*Cel.* Was, is not is; besides, the oath of a lover is no stronger than the word of a tapster; they are both the confirmers of false reckonings; he attends here in the forest on the Duke your father.

*Ref.* I met the Duke yesterday, and had much question with him: he asked me, of what parentage I was; I told him of as good as he; so he laugh'd, and let me go. But what talk we of fathers, when there is such a man as *Orlando*.

*Cel.* O, that's a brave man! he writes brave verses, speaks brave words, swears brave oaths, and breaks them bravely, quite traverse athwart the heart of his lover; as a puny tilter, that spurs his horse but on one side, breaks his staff like a noble goose; but all's brave that youth mounts, and folly guides:—who comes here?

*Enter CORIN.*

*Cor.* Mistress and master, you have oft enquired  
After the shepherd that complain'd of love;  
Whom you saw sitting by me on the turf,

Praising

Praising the proud disdainful shepherdes  
That was his mistress.

*Cel.* Well, and what of him.

*Cor.* If you will see a pageant truly play'd,  
Between the pale complexion of true love,  
And the red glow of scorn and proud disdain;  
Go hence a little, and I shall conduct you,  
If you will mark it.

*Ref.* O come, let us remove;  
The sight of lovers feedeth those in love:  
Bring us but to this sight, and you shall say  
I'll prove a busy actor in their play.

[*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE changes to another part of the Forest.*

*Enter SILVIUS and PHEBE.*

*Sil.* Sweet Phebe, do not scorn me; do not, Phebe:  
Say, that you love me not; but say not so  
In bitterness: the common executioner,  
Whose heart the accustom'd sight of death makes hard,  
Falls not the axe upon the humbled neck,  
But first begs pardon: will you sterner be  
Than he that dies and lives by bloody drops?

*Enter ROSALIND, CELIA, and CORIN.*

*Phe.* I would not be thy executioner:  
I fly thee for I would not injure thee.  
Thou tell'st me, there is murder in mine eye:  
'Tis pretty, sure, and very probable,  
That eyes,—that are the frail'st and softest things,  
Who shut their coward gates on atomies,—  
Should be call'd tyrants, butchers, murderers!  
Now do I frown on thee with all my heart;  
And, if mine eyes can wound, now let them kill thee:  
Now counterfeit to swoon; why now fall down:  
Or, if thou can'st not, oh, for shame, for shame,  
Lie not, to say mine eyes are murderers!  
Now shew the wound mine eyes have made in thee:  
Scratch thee but with a pin, and there remains

Some

Some fear of it; lean but upon a rush,  
 The cicatrice and capable imprefſure  
 Thy palm ſome moment keeps: but now mine eyes,  
 Which I have darted at thee, hurt thee not;  
 Nor, I am ſure, there is no force in eyes  
 That can do hurt.

*Sil.* O dear Phebe  
 If ever (as that ever may be near)  
 You meet in ſome freſh cheek the power of fancy,  
 Then ſhall you know the wounds inviſible  
 That love's keen arrows make.

*Phe.* But, till that time,  
 Come not thou near me: and when that time comes,  
 Afflict me with thy mocks, pity me not;  
*As.* till that time, I ſhall not pity thee.

*Roſ.* And why, I pray you? — Who might be your  
 mother,  
 That you inſult, exult, and all at once,  
 Over the wretched? What though you have beauty  
 (As, by faith, I ſee no more in you  
 Than without candle may go dark to bed)  
 Muſt you be therefore proud and pityleſs?  
 Why, what means this? Why do you look on me?  
 I ſee no more in you than in the ordinary  
 Of nature's ſale-work:—Od's, my little life!  
 I think ſhe means to entangle mine eyes too:—  
 No, faith, proud miſtreſs, hope not after it;  
 'Tis not your inky brows, your black ſilk hair,  
 Your bugle eye-balls, nor your cheek of cream,  
 That can entame my ſpirits to your worſhip.  
 You, fooliſh ſhepherd, wherefore do you follow her  
 Like foggy South, puffing with wind and rain?  
 You are a thouſand times a properer man  
 Than ſhe a woman. 'Tis ſuch fools as you,  
 That make the world full of ill-favour'd children;  
 'Tis not her glaſs, but you, that flatters her;  
 And out of you ſhe ſees herſelf more proper  
 Than any of her lineaments can ſhow her.  
 But, miſtreſs, know yourſelf; down on your knees,  
 And thank heav'n, faſting, for a good man's love:  
 For I muſt tell you friendly in your ear,  
 Sell when you can, you are not for all markets.

Cry the man mercy; love him; take his offer;  
Foul is most foul, being foul to be a scoffer,  
So, take her to thee, shepherd;—fare you well!

*Phe.* Sweet youth, I pray you chide a year together;  
I had rather hear you chide, than this man woo.

*Ros.* [*Aside.*] He's fallen in love with her foulness, and  
she'll fall in love with my anger;—if it be so, as fast as  
she answers thee with frowning looks, I'll sauce her with  
bitter words:—Why look you so upon me?

*Phe.* For no ill will I bear you.

*Ros.* I pray you do not fall in love with me,  
For I am falser than vows made in wine:  
Besides, I like you not: If you will know my house,  
'Tis at the tuft of olives, here hard by:—

Will you go, sister?—Shepherd, ply her hard:  
Come, Sister:—Shepherdess, look on him better,  
And be not proud: though all the world could see,  
None could be so abus'd in sight as he.

Come, to our flock. [*Exeunt ROS. CEL. and CORIN.*]

*Phe.* Dead shepherd, now I find thy saw of might;  
Who ever lov'd, that lov'd not at first sight?

*Sil.* Sweet *Phebe*!

*Phe.* Hah! what say'st thou, *Silvius*?

*Sil.* Sweet *Phebe*, pity me.

*Phe.* Why, I am sorry for thee, gentle *Silvius*!

*Sil.* Wherever sorrow is, relief would be:

If you do sorrow at my grief in love,  
By giving love; your sorrow and my grief in love,  
Were both extermin'd:

*Phe.* Thou hast my love; is not that neighbourly?

*Sil.* I would have you.

*Phe.* Why, that were covetousness.

*Silvius*, the time was, that I hated thee;  
And yet it is not, that I bear thee love;  
But since that thou canst talk of love so well,  
Thy company, which erst was irksome to me,  
I will endure; and I'll employ thee too:  
But I do not look for further recompence,  
Than thine own gladness that thou art employ'd;

*Sil.* So holy and so perfect is my love,  
And I in such a poverty of grace,  
That I shall think it a most plenteous crop

To glean the broken ears after the man  
That the main harvest reaps : loose now and then  
A scatter'd smile, and that I'll live upon.

*Phe.* Know'st thou the youth, that spoke to me ere  
while?

*Sil.* Not very well, but I have met him oft ;  
And he hath bought the cottage and the bounds,  
That the old *Carlot* once was master of.

*Phe.* Think not, I love him, though I ask for him ;  
'Tis but a peevish boy, yet he talks well ;  
But what care I for words ? yet words do well,  
When he that speaks them, pleases those that hear :  
It is a pretty youth ; not very pretty ;  
But, sure, he's proud ; and yet his pride becomes him ;  
He'll make a proper man ; the best thing in him  
Is his complexion ; and faster than his tongue  
Did make offence, his eye did heal it up :  
He is not very tall, yet for his years he's tall ;  
His leg is but so so, and yet 'tis well ;  
There was a pretty redness in his lip,  
A little ripper, and more lusty red  
Than that mix'd in his cheek ; 'twas just the difference  
Betwixt the constant red and mingled damask.  
There be some women, *Silvius*, had they mark'd him  
In parcels as I did, would have gone near  
To fall in love with him : but, for my part,  
I love him not, nor hate him not ; and yet  
I have more cause to hate him than to love him :  
For what had he to do to chide at me ?  
He said, mine eyes were black, and my hair black,  
And, now I am remembered, scorn'd at me :  
I marvel, why I answered not again :  
But that's all one ; omittance is no quittance.  
I'll write to him a very taunting letter,  
And thou shalt bear it ; Wilt thou, *Silvius* ?

*Sil.* *Phebe*, with all my heart.

*Phe.* I'll write it straight ;  
The matter's in my my head, and in my heart ;  
I will be bitter with him, and passing short :  
Go with me, *Silvius*.

[*Exeunt.*

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *The FOREST.*

*Enter ROSALIND, CELIA, and JAQUES.*

JAQUES.

**I** Pr'ythee, pretty youth, let me be better acquainted with thee.

*Ros.* They say, you are a melancholy fellow.

*Jaq.* I am so; I do love it better than laughing.

*Ros.* Those that are in extremity of either, are abominable fellows; and betray themselves to every modern censure worse than drunkards.

*Jaq.* Why, 'tis good to be sad, and say nothing.

*Ros.* Why then, 'tis good to be a post.

*Jaq.* I have neither the scholar's melancholy, which is emulation; nor the musician's, which is fantastical; nor the courtier's, which is proud; nor the soldier's, which is ambitious; nor the lawyer's, which is politic; nor the lady's, which is nice; nor the lover's, which is all these; but it is a melancholy of mine own, compounded of many simples, extracted from many objects, and, indeed, the fundry contemplation of my travels, in which my often rumination wraps me in a most humorous sadness.

*Ros.* A traveller! By my faith, you have great reason to be sad: I fear, you have sold your own lands, to see other men's: then, to have seen much, and to have nothing, is to have rich eyes and poor hands.

*Jaq.* Yes. I have gain'd my experience.

*Enter ORLANDO.*

*Ros.* And your experience makes you sad; I had rather have a fool to make me merry, than experience to make me sad; and to travel for it too.

*Orla.* Good day, and happiness, dear Rosalind!

*Jaq.* Nay, then, God be wi' you, an you talk in blank verse.

[*Exit.*  
*Ros.*

*Ref.* Farewel, Monsieur traveller: Look, you liſp, and wear ſtrange ſuits; diſable all the benefits of your own country; be out of love with your nativity, and almoſt chide God for making you that countenance you are; or I will ſcarce think you have ſwam in a gondola.—Why, how now, *Orlando*! where have you been all this while? You a lover?—An you ſerve me ſuch another trick, never come in my ſight more.

*Orla.* My fair *Rosalind*, I come within an hour of my promiſe.

*Ref.* Break an hour's promiſe in love? He that will divide a minute into a thouſand parts, and break but a part of the thouſandth part of a minute in the affairs of love, it may be ſaid of him, that Cupid hath clapt him o'the ſhoulder, but I warrant him heart-whole.

*Orla.* Pardon me, dear *Rosalind*.

*Ref.* Nay, an you be ſo tardy, come no more in my ſight; I had as lief be woo'd of a ſnail.

*Orla.* Of a ſnail?

*Ref.* Ay, of a ſnail; for though he comes ſlowly, he carries his houſe on his head; a better jointure, I think, than you can make a woman: beſides he brings his deſtiny with him.

*Orla.* What's that?

*Ref.* Why, horns; which ſuch as you are fain to be beholden to your wives for: but he comes armed in his fortune, and prevents the ſlander of his wife.

*Orla.* Virtue is no horn-maker; and my *Rosalind* is virtuous.

*Ref.* And I am your *Rosalind*?

*Cel.* It pleaſes him to call you ſo; but he hath a *Rosalind* of a better leer than you.

*Ref.* Come, woo me, woo me: for now I am in a holiday humour, and like enough to conſent:—What would you ſay to me now, an I were your very very *Rosalind*?

*Orla.* I would kiſs, before I ſpoke.

*Ref.* Nay you were better ſpeak firſt; and when you were gravell'd for lack of matter, you might take occaſion to kiſs. Very good orators, when they are out, they will ſpit; and for lovers lacking (God warn us!) matter, the cleanlieſt ſhift is to kiſs.

*Orla.* How if the kiſs be denied?

*Ref.*



*Ros.* Then she puts you to entreaty, and there begins new matter.

*Orla.* Who could be out before his beloved mistress?

*Ros.* Marry, that should you, if I were your mistress; or I should think my honesty ranker than my wit.

*Orla.* What, of my suit?

*Ros.* Not out of your apparel, and yet out of your suit. Am not I your *Rosalind*?

*Orla.* I take some joy to say you are, because I would be talking of her.

*Ros.* Well in her person, I say—I will not have you.

*Orla.* Then, in mine own person I die.

*Ros.* No faith, die by attorney. The poor world is almost six thousand years old, and in all this time there was not any man died in his own person, *videlicet*, in a love cause. Troilus had his brains dash'd out with a Grecian club; yet he did what he could to die before; and he is one of the patterns of love. Leander, he would have liv'd may a fair year, though Hero had turn'd nun, if it had not been for a hot midsummer night: for good youth, he went but forth to wash him in the Hellespont, and being taken with the cramp, was drown'd; and the foolish chroniclers of that age found it was,—Hero of Sestos. But these are all lies; men have died from time to time, and worms have eaten them, but not for love.

*Orla.* I would not have my right *Rosalind* of this mind; for I protest, her frown might kill me.

*Ros.* By this hand, it will not kill a fly: But come, now I will be your *Rosalind* in a more coming-on disposition; and ask me what you will, I will grant it.

*Orla.* Then love me, *Rosalind*.

*Ros.* Yes, faith will I, Fridays, and Saturdays, and all.

*Orla.* And wilt thou have me?

*Ros.* Ay, and twenty such.

*Orla.* What say'st thou?

*Ros.* Are you not good?

*Orla.* I hope so.

*Ros.* Why then, can one desire too much of a good thing?—Come, sister, you shall be the priest, and marry us.—Give me your hand, *Orlando*:—What do you say, sister?

*Orla.* Pray thee, marry us.

*Cel.* I cannot say the words.

*Ref.* You must begin—*Will you Orlando—*

*Cel.* Go to:—Will you, *Orlando*, have to wife this *Rosalind*?

*Orla.* I will.

*Ref.* Ay, but when?

*Orla.* Why now; as fast as she can marry us.

*Ref.* Then you must say.—*I take thee, Rosalind for wife.*

*Orla.* I take thee, *Rosalind*, for wife.

*Ref.* I might ask you for your commission; but, I do take thee, *Orlando*, for my husband: There's a girl goes before the priest; and, certainly, a woman's thought runs before her actions.

*Orla.* So do all thoughts; they are wing'd.

*Ref.* Now tell me, how long would you have her, after you have possessed her.

*Orla.* For ever and a day.

*Ref.* Say a day without the ever; No, no, *Orlando*: men are April when they woo, December when they wed: maids are May when they are maids, but the sky changes when they are wives. I will be more jealous of thee than a Barbary cock-pigeon over his hen; more clamorous than a parrot against rain: more new fangled than an ape; more giddy in my desires than a monkey; I will weep for nothing, like Diana in the fountain, and I will do that when you are dispos'd to be merry: I will laugh like a hyæna, and that when you are inclin'd to sleep.

*Orla.* But will my *Rosalind* do so?

*Ref.* By my life, she will do as I do.

*Orla.* O, but she is wise.

*Ref.* Or else she could not have the wit to do this: the wiser, the waywarder; make the doors upon a woman's wit, and it will out at the casement; shut that, and 'twill out at the key-hole; stop that, it will fly with the smoak out at the chimney.

*Orla.* A man that had a wife with such a wit, he might say,—*Wit, whither wilt?*

*Ref.* Nay, you might keep that check for it, 'till you met your wife's wit going to your neighbour's bed.

*Orla.* And what wit could wit have to excuse that?

*Ref.* Marry, to say, she came to seek you there. You shall not take her without her answer, unless you take her  
without

without her tongue. O that woman that cannot make her fault her husband's occasion, let her never nurse her child herself, for she will breed it like a fool!

*Orla.* For these two hours, *Rosalind*, I will leave thee.

*Ros.* Alas, dear love, I cannot lack thee two hours.

*Orla.* I must attend the duke at dinner; by two o'clock I will be with thee again.

*Ros.* Ay, go your ways, go your ways;—I knew what you would prove; my friends told me as much, and I thought no less:—that flattering tongue of your's won me:—'tis but one cast away, and so,—come, Death.—Two o'clock is your hour?

*Orla.* Ay, sweet *Rosalind*.

*Ros.* By my troth, and in good earnest, and so God mend me, and by all pretty oaths that are not dangerous, if you break one jot of your promise, or come one minute behind your hour, I will think you the most pathological break-promise, and the most hollow lover, and the most unworthy of her you call *Rosalind*, that may be chosen out of the gross band of the unfaithful: therefore beware my censure, and keep your promise.

*Orla.* With no less religion, than if thou wert indeed my *Rosalind*: So, adieu.

*Ros.* Well, time is the old justice that examines all such offenders, and let time try: Adieu. [*Exit ORLANDO.*]

*Cel.* You have simply misus'd our sex in your love-prate, we must have your doublet and hose pluck'd over your head, and shew the world what the bird hath done to her own nest.

*Ros.* O coz, coz, coz, my pretty little coz, that thou didst know how many fathom deep I am in love! But it cannot be sound'd; my affection hath an unknown bottom, like the bay of Portugal.

*Cel.* Or rather, bottomless; that as fast as you pour affection in, it runs out.

*Ros.* No, that same wicked bastard of Venus, that was begot of thought, conceiv'd of spleen, and born of madness; that blind rascally boy, that abuses every one's eyes, because his own are out, let him be judge how deep I am in love:—I'll tell thee, *Aliena*, I cannot be out of sight of *Orlando*: I'll go find a shadow, and sigh till he come.

*Cel.* And I'll sleep.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter*

*Enter JAQUES, Lords, and Foresters.*

*Jaq.* Which is he that kill'd the deer?

*Lord.* Sir, it was I.

*Jaq.* Let's present him to the duke, like a Roman Conqueror; and it would do well to set the deer's horns upon his head, for a branch of victory; have you not song, Forester, for this purpose?

*For.* Yes, Sir.

*Jaq.* Sing it; 'tis no matter how it be in tune, so it make noise enough.

*Music.* SONG.

*What shall he have that kill'd the deer?*

*His leather skin and horns to wear;*

*Then sing him home:—take thou no scorn*

*To wear the horn, the lusty horn:*

*It was a crest ere thou wast born.*

*Thy father's father wore it,*

*And thy father bore it,*

*The horn, the horn, the lusty horn,*

*Is not a thing to laugh to scorn.*

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter ROSALIND and CELIA.*

*Ros.* How say you now, is it not past two o'clock? I wonder much *Orlando* is not here.

*Cel.* I warrant you, with pure love and troubled brain; he hath ta'en his bow and arrows, and is gone forth to sleep; look, who comes here.

*Enter SILVIUS.*

*Sil.* My errand is to you, fair youth,  
My gentle *Phebe* bid me give you this: [*Giving a Letter.*]  
I know not the contents; but as I guess,  
By the stern brow and waspish action  
Which she did use as she was writing of it.  
It bears an angry tenour; pardon me,  
I am but a guiltless messenger.

*Ros.* [*Reading.*] Patience herself should startle at this letter.

And play the swaggerer; bear this, bear all.  
She says, I am not fair; that I lack manners;

*She*

She calls me proud, and that she could not love me  
 Were man as rare as Phoenix ; odd's my will !  
 Her love is not the hare that I do hunt.  
 Why writes she so to me ? well, shepherd, well,  
 This is a letter of your own device.

*Sil.* No, I protest, I know not the contents ;  
*Phebe* did write it.

*Ros.* Come, come, you're a fool,  
 And turn'd into th' extremity of love.  
 I saw her hand, she has a leathern hand,  
 A free-stone coloured hand ; I verily did think,  
 That her old gloves were on, but 'twas her hands ;  
 She has a hufwife's hand, but that's no matter ;  
 I say, she never did invent this letter ;  
 This is a man's invention, and his hand.

*Sil.* Sure, it is her's.

*Ros.* Why, 'tis a boisterous and cruel stile,  
 A stile for challengers ; why, she defies me,  
 Like *Turk* to Christian ; woman's gentle brain  
 Could not drop forth such giant rude invention ;  
 Such *Ethiop* words, blacker in their effect  
 Than in their countenance ; will you hear the letter ?

*Sil.* So please you, for I never heard it yet ;  
 Yet heard too much of *Phebe*'s cruelty.

*Ros.* She *Phebe*'s me : mark, how the tyrant writes.

[*Reads.*] *Art thou God to shepherd turn'd,  
 That a maiden's heart hath burn'd ?*

Can a woman rail thus ?

*Sil.* Call you this railing ?

*Ros.* [*Reads,*] *Why thy Godhead laid apart,  
 Warr'st thou with a woman's heart ?*

Did you ever hear such railing ?

*Whiles the eye of man did woo me,  
 That could do no vengeance to me.*

Meaning me, a beast !

*If the scorn of your bright eyne  
 Have power to raise such love in mine,  
 Alack, in me what strange effect  
 Would they work in mild aspect ?  
 Whiles you chide me, I did love ;  
 How then might your prayers move ?  
 He that brings this love to thee,  
 Little knows this love in me ;*

*And*

*And by him seal up thy mind,  
Whether that thy youth and kind  
Will the faithful offer take  
Of me, and all that I can make ;  
Or else by him my love deny.  
And then I'll study how to die.*

*Sil.* Call you this chiding ?

*Cel.* Alas, poor shepherd !

*Ref.* Do you pity him ? no, he deserves no pity ; wilt thou love such a woman ? what, to make thee an instrument, and play false strains upon thee ? not to be endured ! Well, go your way to her, (for I see love hath made thee a tame snake,) and say this to her ; “ that if she love me, I charge “ her to love thee : if she will not, I will never have her, “ unless thou intreat for her.” If you be a true lover, hence, and not a word ; for here comes more company.

[*Exit Silvius.*]

*Enter OLIVER.*

*Oli.* Good-morrow, fair ones : pray you, if you know, Where, in the purlieus of this forest, stands A sheep-cote fenc'd about with olive trees ?

*Cel.* West of this place, down in the neighbour bottom, The rank of osiers, by the murmuring stream, Left on your right hand, brings you to the place ; But at this hour the house doth keep itself There's none within.

*Oli.* If that an eye may profit by a tongue, Then should I know you by description, Such garments, and such years : “ the boy is fair “ Of female favour, and bestows himself “ Like a ripe sister : but the woman low, “ And browner than her brother.” Are not you The owner of the house I did enquire for ?

*Cel.* It is no boast, being ask'd, to say we are,

*Oli.* Orlando doth commend him to you both, And to that youth, he calls his *Rosalind*, He sends this bloody napkin. Are you he ?

*Ref.* I am ; what must we understand by this ?

*Oli.* Some of my shame, if you will know of me What man I am, and how, and why, and where This handkerchief was stain'd.

*Cel.* I pray you tell it.

*Oli.* When last the young Orlando parted from you, He left a promise to return again

Within

Within an hour; and, pacing through the forest;  
 Chewing the food of sweet and bitter fancy,  
 Lo, what befel? he threw his eye aside,  
 And, mark, what object did present itself!  
 Under an oak, whose bows were moss'd with age,  
 And high top bald with dry antiquity,  
 A wretched ragged man, o'er-grown with hair,  
 Lay sleeping on his back! about his neck  
 A green and gilded snake had wreath'd itself,  
 Who with her head, nimble in threats, approach'd  
 The opening of his mouth; but suddenly  
 Seeing *Orlando*, it unlink'd itself,  
 And with indented glides did slip away  
 Into a bush, under which bush's shade  
 A lioness, with udders all drawn dry,  
 Lay couching, head on ground with cat-like watch;  
 When that the sleeping man should stir; for 'tis  
 The royal disposition of that beast,  
 To prey on nothing that doth seem as dead:  
 This seen, *Orlando* did approach the man,  
 And found it was his brother, his eldest brother.

*Cel.* O, I have heard him speak of that same brother;  
 And he did render him the most unnatural  
 That liv'd 'mongst men.

*Oli.* And well he might so do.  
 For well I know he was unnatural.

*Ros.* But to *Orlando*;—did he leave him there,  
 Food to the suck'd and hungry lioness?

*Oli.* Twice did he turn his back and purpos'd so;  
 But, kindness, nobler ever than revenge,  
 And nature stronger than his just occasion,  
 Made him give battle to the lioness,  
 Who quickly fell before him: in which hurtling  
 From miserable slumber I awak'd.

*Cel.* Are you his brother?

*Ros.* Was it you he rescu'd?

*Cel.* Was it you that did so oft contrive to kill him?

*Oli.* 'Twas I; but 'tis not I; I do not shame  
 To tell you what I was, since my conversion  
 So sweetly tastes, being the thing I am.

*Ros.* But, for the bloody napkin?

*Oli.* By and by.

When from the first to last, betwixt us two,

Tears our recountments had most kindly bath'd.  
 As how I came into that desert place;—  
 In brief, he led me to the gentle duke,  
 Who gave me fresh array, and entertainment,  
 Committing me unto my brother's love;  
 Who led me instantly unto his cave,  
 There stripp'd himself, and here upon his arm  
 The lions had torn some flesh away,  
 Which all this while had bled? and now he fainted,  
 And cry'd in fainting upon *Rosalind*.  
 Brief, I recovered him, bound up his wound;  
 And, after some small space, being strong at heart,  
 He sent me hither, stranger as I am;  
 To tell this story, that you might excuse  
 His broken promise, and to give this napkin,  
 Dy'd in his blood, unto the shepherd youth  
 That he in sport doth call his *Rosalind*.

*Cel.* Why how now *Ganymed*? sweet *Ganymed*!

[*ROSALIND faints*,

*Oli.* Many will swoon when they do look on blood.

*Cel.* There is more in it:—Cousin—*Ganymed*!

*Oli.* Look, he recovers.

*Ros.* I would, I were at home.

*Cel.* We'll lead you thither:—

I pray you, will you take him by the arm?

*Oli.* Be of good cheer, youth:—You a man—you lack a man's heart.

*Ros.* I do so, I confess it. Ah, sir, a body would think this was well counterfeited; I pray you, tell your brother how well I counterfeited:—heigh ho!—

*Oli.* This was not counterfeited; there is too great testimony in your complexion, that it was a passion of earnest.

*Ros.* Counterfeit, I assure you.

*Oli.* Well then, take a good heart, and counterfeit to be a man.

*Ros.* So I do: but i'faith, I should have been a woman by right.

*Cel.* Come, you look paler and paler; pray you, draw homewards:—Good sir, go with us.

*Oli.* That will I, for I must bear answer back  
 How you excuse my brother, *Rosalind*.

*Ros.* I shall devise something: But I pray you, commend my counterfeiting to him.—Will you go?

[*Exeunt*.



## ACT V.

## SCENE THE FOREST.

Enter CLOWN and AUDREY.

CLOWN.

WE shall find a time, *Audrey*; patience, gentle *Audrey*.  
*Aud.* Faith, the priest was good enough, for all the old gentleman's saying.

*Clo.* A most wicked Sir *Oliver*, *Audrey*; a most vile *Martext*! but *Audrey*, there is a youth here in the forest lays claim to you.

*Aud.* Ay, I know who 'tis, he hath no interest in me in the world; here comes the man you mean.

Enter WILLIAM.

*Clo.* It is meat and drink to me to see a clown; by my troth, we, that have good wits, have much to answer for; we shall be flouting; we cannot hold.

*Will.* Good e'en *Audrey*.

*Aud.* God ye good ev'n, *William*.

*Will.* And good ev'n to you, Sir.

*Clo.* Good ev'n, gentle friend. Cover thy head, cover thy head; nay, pr'ythee be cover'd. How old art thou friend?

*Will.* Five and twenty, Sir.

*Clo.* A ripe age: is thy name *William*?

*Will.* *William*, Sir.

*Clo.* A fair name. Wast born i'th' forest here?

*Will.* Ay, Sir, I thank God.

*Clo.* Thank God: a good answer:—art rich?

*Will.* Faith, Sir, so, so.

*Clo.* So, so, is good, very good, very excellent good; and yet it is not; it is but so, so. Art thou wise.

*Will.* Ay, Sir, I have a pretty wit.

*Clo.* Why, thou say'st well: I do now remember a saying; *the fool doth think he is wise, but the wise man knoweth himself to be a fool*. The heathen philosopher, when he had a desire to eat a grape, would open his lips when he put it into his mouth; meaning thereby, that grapes were made to eat, and lips to open. You do love this maid?

*Will.* I do, Sir.

*Clo.* Give me your hand: art thou learned?

*Will.* No, Sir.

*Clo.* Then learn this of me; to have, is to have. For it is a figure in rhetoric that drink being poured out of a cup

cup into a glass, by filling the one doth empty the other: For all your writers do consent, that *ipse* is he: now you are not *ipse*: for I am he.

*Will.* Which he, Sir.

*Clo.* He, Sir, that must marry this woman; therefore you, Clown, abandon, which is in the vulgar, leave the society, which in the boorish, is company of this female; which in the common, is woman; which together is, abandon the society of this female; or Clown, thou perishest; or, to thy better understanding, diest; or, to wit I kill thee, make thee away, translate thy life into death, thy liberty into bondage; I will deal in poison with thee, or in bastinado, or in steel; I will bandy with thee in faction; I will over-run thee with policy; I will kill thee a hundred and fifty ways; therefore tremble and depart.

*Aud.* Do, good *William*.

*Will.* God rest you, merry Sir.

[*Exit.*

*Enter CORIN.*

*Cor.* Our master and mistress seek you; come away, away.

*Clo.* Trip, *Audrey*; trip, *Audrey*; I attend, I attend.

[*Exeunt.*

*Enter ORLANDO and OLIVER.*

*Orla.* Is't possible, that on so little acquaintance you should like her? that, but seeing, you should love her? and loving, woo? and wooing she should grant, and will you persevere to enjoy her?

*Oli.* Neither call the giddiness of it in question, the poverty of her, the small acquaintance, my sudden wooing, nor her sudden consenting; but say with me, I love *Aliena*; say with her that she loves me: consent with both; that we may enjoy each other; it shall be to your good; for my father's house, and all the revenue that was old Sir *Rowland's*, will I estate upon you, and here live and die a shepherd.

*Enter ROSALIND.*

*Orla.* You have my consent. Let your wedding be to-morrow: thither will I invite the Duke, and all his contented followers; go you, and prepare *Aliena*; for, look you, here comes my *Rosalind*.

*Ros.* God save you, brother.

*Oli.* And you, fair sister.

*Ros.* Oh, my dear *Orlando*, how it grieves me to see thee wear thy heart in a scarf.

*Orla.*

*Orla.* It is my arm.

*Ref.* I thought thy heart had been wounded with the claws of a lion.

*Orla.* Wounded it is, but with the eyes of a lady.

*Ref.* Did your brother tell you how I counterfeited to swoon, when he shew'd me your handkerchief?

*Orla.* Ay, and greater wonders than that.

*Ref.* O, I know where you are : nay, 'tis true : there was never any thing so sudden, but the sight of two rams, and *Cæsar's* thrafonical brag of, *I came, saw, and overcame* : for your brother and my sister no sooner met, but they look'd ; no sooner look'd, but they lov'd ; no sooner lov'd, but they sigh'd ; no sooner sigh'd, but they ask'd one another the reason ; no sooner knew the reason, but they sought the remedy ; and in these degrees have made a pair of stairs to marriage, which they will climb incontinent, or else be incontinent before marriage ; they are in the very wrath of love, and they will together. Clubs cannot part them.

*Orla.* They shall be married to-morrow ; and I will bid the Duke to the nuptial. But, O, how bitter a thing it is to look into happiness through another man's eyes ! by so much the more shall I to-morrow be at the height of heart-heaviness, by how much I shall think my brother happy, in having what he wishes for.

*Ref.* Why, then to-morrow I cannot serve your turn for *Rosalind*.

*Orla.* I can live no longer by thinking.

*Ref.* I will weary you then no longer with idle talking. Know of me then, for now I speak to some purpose, that I know you are a gentleman of good conceit, I speak not this, that you should bear a good opinion of my knowledge ; inso much, I say, I know what you are ; neither do I labour for a greater esteem than may in some measure draw a belief from you to do yourself good, and not to grace me. Believe then, if you please, that I can do strange things ; I have, since I was three years old, conversed with a magician, most profound in his art, and yet not damnable. If you do love *Rosalind* so near the heart, as your gesture cries it out, when your brother marries *Aliena*, you shall marry her. I know into what streights of fortune she is driven, and it is not impossible to me, if it appear not inconvenient to you, to set her before your eyes to-morrow ; human as she is, and without any danger.

*Orla.* Speak'st thou in sober meanings?

*Ref.*

*Ros.* By my life, I do; which I tender dearly, tho' I say I am a magician: therefore, put you on your best array; bid your friends, for if you will be married to-morrow, you shall; and to *Rosalind*, if you will.

*Enter SILVIUS and PHEBE.*

Look, here comes a lover of mine, and a lover of her's.

*Phe.* Youth you have done me much ungentleness,  
To shew the letter that I writ to you.

*Ros.* I care not, if I have: it is my study  
To seem despightful and ungentle to you:  
You are there follow'd by a faithful shepherd;  
Look upon him, look upon him; he worships you.

*Phe.* Good shepherd, tell this youth what 'tis to love.

*Sil.* It is to be made all of sighs and tears,  
And so am I for *Phebe*.

*Phe.* And I for *Ganymed*.

*Orla.* And I for *Rosalind*.

*Ros.* And I for no woman.

*Sil.* It is to be made all of faith and service;  
And so am I for *Phebe*.

*Phe.* And I for *Ganymed*.

*Orla.* And I for *Rosalind*.

*Ros.* And I for no woman.

*Sil.* It is to be all made of fantasy,  
All made of passion, and all made of wishes,  
All adoration, duty, and observance,  
All humbleness, all patience, and impatience,  
All purity, all trial, all observance;  
And so am I for *Phebe*.

*Phe.* And so am I for *Ganymed*.

*Orla.* And so am I for *Rosalind*.

*Ros.* And so am I for no woman.

*Phe.* If this be so, why blame you me to love you?  
[*To Ros.*

*Sil.* If this be so, why blame you me to love you?  
[*To Phe.*

*Orla.* If this be so, why blame you me to love you?

*Ros.* Who do you speak to, why blame you me to love you?

*Orla.* To her that is not here, nor doth not hear?

*Ros.* Pray you no more of this; 'tis like the howling  
of Irish wolves against the moon.—I will help you, if I  
can [*To Silvius.*]  
—I would love you if I could; [*To Phebe.*]  
--To-morrow meet me altogether.--I will marry you, [*To Phebe.*]

*Phebe*] if ever I marry woman, and I'll be married to-morrow :—I will satisfy you, [*To Orlando*.] if ever I satisfied man, and you shall be married to-morrow. I will content you, [*To Silvius*] if what pleases you contents you, and you shall be married to-morrow.—As you love *Rosalind*, meet ; [*To Orlando*].—As you love *Phebe*, meet ; [*To Silvius*].—And, as I love no woman, I'll meet.—So fare you well ; I have left you commands.

*Sil.* I'll not fail, if I live.

*Phe.* Nor I.

*Orla.* Nor I.

[*Exeunt*.]

### S C E N E III.

*Enter CLOWN and AUDREY.*

*Clo.* To-morrow is the joyful day, *Audrey* ; to-morrow will we be married.

*Aud.* I do desire it with all my heart : and I hope it is no dishonest desire, to desire to be a woman of the world. Here come two of the banished Duke's pages.

*Enter Two Pages.*

1 *Page.* Well met, honest gentlemen.

*Clo.* By my troth, well met : Come, fit, fit, and a song.

2 *Page.* We are for you : fit i'th middle.

1 *Page.* Shall we clap into't roundly, without hawking, or spitting, or saying we are hoarse ; which are the only prologues to a bad voice ?

2 *Page.* I'faith, i'faith ; and both in a tune, like two gypsies on a horse.

### S O N G.

*It was a lover and his lass,*

*With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino,*

*That o'er the green corn-field did pass*

*In the spring time, the pretty rank time,*

*When the birds do sing, hey ding a ding, ding*

*Sweet lovers love the spring.*

*Between the acres of the rye,  
 With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino,  
 These pretty country folks would lie,  
 In the spring time, &c.*

*The carol they began that hour,  
 With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino,  
 How that life was but a flower  
 In the spring time, &c.*

*And therefore take the present time,  
 With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino,  
 For love is crown'd with the prime  
 In the spring time, &c.*

*Cl.* Truly young gentlemen, though there was no great matter in the ditty, yet the note was very untuneable.

*1 Page.* You are deceived, sir; we kept time, we lost not our time.

*Cl.* By my troth, yes; I count it but time lost to hear such a foolish song. God be with you; and God mend your voices.—Come, *Audrey*. [Exeunt.]

#### SCENE IV. Another part of the Forest.

*Enter Duke Senior, AMIENS, JACQUES ORLANDO, OLIVER, and CELIA.*

*Duke Sen.* Dost thou believe, *Orlando*, that the boy Can do all this that he hath promised?

*Orla.* I sometimes do believe, and sometimes do not; As those that fear they hope, and know they fear.

*Enter ROSALIND, SILVIUS, and PHEBE.*

*Ref.* Patience once more, whiles our compact is urg'd;—  
 You say, if I bring in your *Rosalind*, [To the Duke.  
 You will bestow her on *Orlando* here?

*Duke Sen.* That would I, had I kingdoms to give with her.

*Ref.*

*Ros.* And you say, you will have her when I bring her?

[*To Orlando.*]

*Orla.* That would I, were I of all kingdoms king.

*Ros.* You say, you'll marry me, if I be willing?

[*To Phebe.*]

*Phe.* That will I, should I die the hour after.

*Ros.* But if you do refuse to marry me,

You'll give yourself to this most faithful shepherd?

*Phe.* So is the bargain.

*Ros.* You say that you'll have *Phebe*, if she will?

[*To Silvius.*]

*Sil.* Though to have her and death were both one thing.

*Ros.* I have promised to make all this matter even.

Keep your word, O Duke! to give your daughter;—

You yours, *Orlando*, to receive his daughter;—

Keep your word, *Phebe*, that you'll marry me;

Or else refusing me, to wed this shepherd:

Keep your word, *Silvius*, that you'll marry her,

If she refuse me, and from hence I go,

To make these doubts all even.

*Exeunt Rosalind and Celia.*

*Duke Sen.* I do remember in this shepherd's boy  
Some lively touches of my daughter's favour.

*Orla.* My lord, the first time that I ever saw him,  
Methought he was a brother to your daughter:  
But my good lord, this boy is forest-born;  
And hath been tutor'd in the rudiments  
Of many desperate studies by his uncle,  
Whom he reports to be a great magician,  
Obscured in the circle of this forest.

*Enter Clown and AUDREY.*

*Jaq.* There is, sure another flood toward, and these couples are coming to the ark? Here comes a pair of very strange beasts, which in all tongues are called fools.

*Clo.* Salutation and greeting to you all!

*Jaq.* Good my lord, bid him welcome: This is the motley-minded gentleman, that I have so often met in the forest: he hath been a courtier he swears.

*Clo.* If any man doubt that, let him put me to my purgation.

gation. I have trod a measure; I have flattered a lady; I have been politick with my friend, smooth with mine enemy; I have undone three taylors; I have had four quarrels, and like to have fought one.

*Jaq.* And how was that ta'en up?

*Clo.* Faith, we met, and found the quarrel was upon the seventh cause.

*Jaq.* How seventh cause?—Good, my Lord, like you this fellow?

*Duke Sen.* I like him very well.

*Clo.* God'ild you sir; I desire you of the like. I press in here, sir, among the rest of the country copulatives, to swear and to forswear; according as marriage binds or blood breaks:—A poor virgin, sir, an ill-favoured thing, sir, but mine own; a poor humour of mine, sir, to take that no man else will: Rich honestly dwells like a miser, sir, in a poor-house; as your pearl in your foul oyster.

*Duke Sen.* By my faith, he is very swift and sententious.

*Clo.* According to the fool's bolt, Sir, and such dulcet diseases.

*Jaq.* But for the seventh cause; how did you find the quarrel on the seventh cause?

*Clo.* Upon a lie seven times removed;—Bear your body more seeming, *Audrey*:—as thus, I did dislike the cut of a certain courtier's beard; he sent me word, if I said his beard was not cut well, he was in the mind it was: This is called the *Retort courteous*. If I sent him word again, it was not well cut, he would send me word, he cut it to please himself; This is called the *Quip modest*. If again it was not well cut, he disabled my judgment: This is called the *Reply churlish*. If again, it was not well cut, he would answer, I spake not true. This is called the *Reproof valiant*. If again, it was not well cut, he would say, I lie. This is called the *Countercheck quarrelsome*; and so to the *Lie circumstantial*, and the *Lie Direct*.

*Jaq.* And how oft did you say his beard was not well cut?

*Clo.* I durst go no further than the *Lie circumstantial*, nor he durst not give me the *Lie direct*; and so we measured swords and parted.

*Jaq.* Can you nominate in order now the degrees of the lie?

*Clo.*



*Clo.* O, Sir, we quarrel in print, by the book; as you have books for good manners: I will name you the degrees. The first the Retort courteous; the second the Quip modest; the third the Reply churlish; the fourth the Reproof valiant; the fifth the Countercheck quarrelsome; the sixth the Lie with circumstance; the seventh, the Lie direct. All these you may avoid, but the Lie direct; and you may avoid that too with an *If*. I knew when seven justices could not take up a quarrel; but when the parties were met themselves, one of them thought but of an *If*, as, *If you said so, then I said so*; and they shook hands, and swore brothers. Your *If* is the only peace-maker; much virtue in *If*.

*Jaq.* Is not this a rare fellow, my Lord? he's good at any thing, and yet a fool.

*Duke Sen.* He uses his folly like a stalking-horse, and under the presentation of that he shoots his wit.

*Enter HYMEN, ROSALIND in Woman's Cloaths, and CELIA.*

## STILL MUSIC.

*Hym.* *Then is there mirth in heaven,  
When earthly things made even  
Atone together.  
Good duke, receive thy daughter,  
Hymen from heaven brought her,  
Yea, brought her hither;  
That thou might'st join her hand with his,  
Whose heart within his bosom is.*

*Ros.* To you I give myself, for I am yours.

[*To the Duke.*

To you I give myself, for I am yours. [*To Orlando.*

*Duke Sen.* If there be truth in fight, you are my daughter.

*Orla.* If there be truth in fight, you are my *Rosalind*.

*Phe* If fight and shape be true,

Why then my love adieu!

*Ros.* I'll have no father, if you be not he. [*To the Duke.*

I'll

I'll have no husband, if you be not he :— [To Orlando.  
Nor ne'er wed woman if you be not she. [To Phebe.

*Hym*, Peace, ho ! I bar confusion :  
'Tis I must make conclusion  
Of these most strange events :  
Here's eight that must take hands,  
To join in *Hymen's* bands,  
If truth holds true contents.

You and you no cross shall part ;  
[To Orlando and Rosalind.

You and you are heart in heart :  
[To Oliver and Celio.

You to his love must accord,  
Or have a woman to your lord :— [To Phebe.  
You and you are sure together,  
As the winter to foul weather.

[To the Clown and Audrey,  
Whiles a wedlock-hymn we sing,  
Feed yourselves with questioning ;  
That reason wonder may diminish,  
How thus we met and these things finish.

## S O N G.

*Wedding is great Juno's crown,  
O blessed band of board and bed !  
'Tis Hymen peoples ev'ry town ;  
High Wedlock then be honoured :  
Honour, high honour and renown,  
To Hymen, God of every town !*

*Duke Sen.* O my dear niece, welcome thou art to me ;  
Even daughter, welcome in no less degree.

*Phe.* I will not eat my word, now thou art mine ;  
Thy faith my fancy to thee doth combine.

*Enter JAQUES DE BOYS.*

*Jaq. de B.* Let me have audience for a word or two.—  
I am the second son of old Sir Rowland,  
That bring these tidings to this fair assembly :—

Duke

Duke *Frederick*, hearing how that every day  
Men of great worth resorted to this forest,  
Address'd a mighty power; which were on foot,  
In his own conduct purposely to take  
His brother here, and put him to the sword:  
And to the skirts of this wild wood he came;  
Where meeting with an old religious man,  
After some question with him, was converted  
Both from his enterprise and from the world:  
His crown bequeathing to his banished brother,  
And all their lands restored to them again  
That were with him exil'd: This to be true,  
I do engage my life.

*Duke Sen.* Welcome, young man:  
Thou offer'st fairly to thy brother's wedding:  
To one his lands with-held; and to the other,  
A land itself at large a dukedom.  
First in this forest let us do those ends  
That here were well begun, and well begot:  
And after, every of this happy number,  
That have endured shrewd days and nights with us,  
Shall share the good of our returned fortune,  
According to the measure of their states.  
Meantime forget this new-fall'n dignity,  
And fall into our rustic revelry:—  
Play, music;—and you brides and bridegrooms all,  
With measure heap'd on joy, to the measures fall.

*Jaq.* Sir, by your patience.—If I heard you rightly,  
The Duke hath put on a religious life,  
And thrown into neglect the pompous court?

*Jaq. de B.* He hath.

*Jaq.* To him will I: out of these convertites  
There is much matter to be heard and learn'd.—  
You to your former honour I bequeath; [*To the Duke.*  
Your patience and your virtue well deserves it:—  
You to a love, that your true faith doth merit.—

[*To Orlando.*  
You to your land, and love, and great allies:—

[*To Oliver.*  
You to a long and well-deserved bed:— [*To Silvius.*  
And you to wrangling; for thy loving voyage

[*To the Clown.*

Is

Is but for two months victual'd :—So to your pleasures ;  
I am for other than for dancing measures.

*Duke Sen.* Stay, *Jaq.*, stay.

*Jaq.* To see no pastime I :— what you would have,  
I'll stay to know at your abandon'd cave. [Exit.

*Duke Sen.* Proceed, proceed ; we will begin these rites,  
As we do trust they'll end in true delights.

## EPILOGUE.

*Ref.* It is not the fashion to see the lady the epilogue :  
but it is no more unhandsome than to see the lord the  
prologue. If it be true that *good wine needs no bush*, 'tis  
true, that a good play needs no epilogue : yet to good  
wine they do use good bushes ; and good plays prove the  
better by the help of good epilogues. What a case am I  
in then, that am neither a good epilogue, nor can infi-  
nuate with you in behalf of a good play ? I am not fur-  
nished like a beggar, therefore to beg will not become me :  
my way is, to conjure you : and I'll begin with the wo-  
men. I charge you, O women ! for the love you bear  
to men, to like as much of this play as pleases them :  
and I charge you, O men ! for the love you bear to wo-  
men (as I perceive by your fimping, none of you hate  
them), that between you and the women the play may  
please. If I were a woman, I would kiss as many of you  
as had beards that pleased me, complexions that lik'd me,  
and breaths that I defy'd not : and I am sure, as many  
as have good beards, or good faces, or sweet breaths, will  
for my kind offer, when I make curt'sy, bid me fare-  
well. [Exeunt omnes.

THE END.

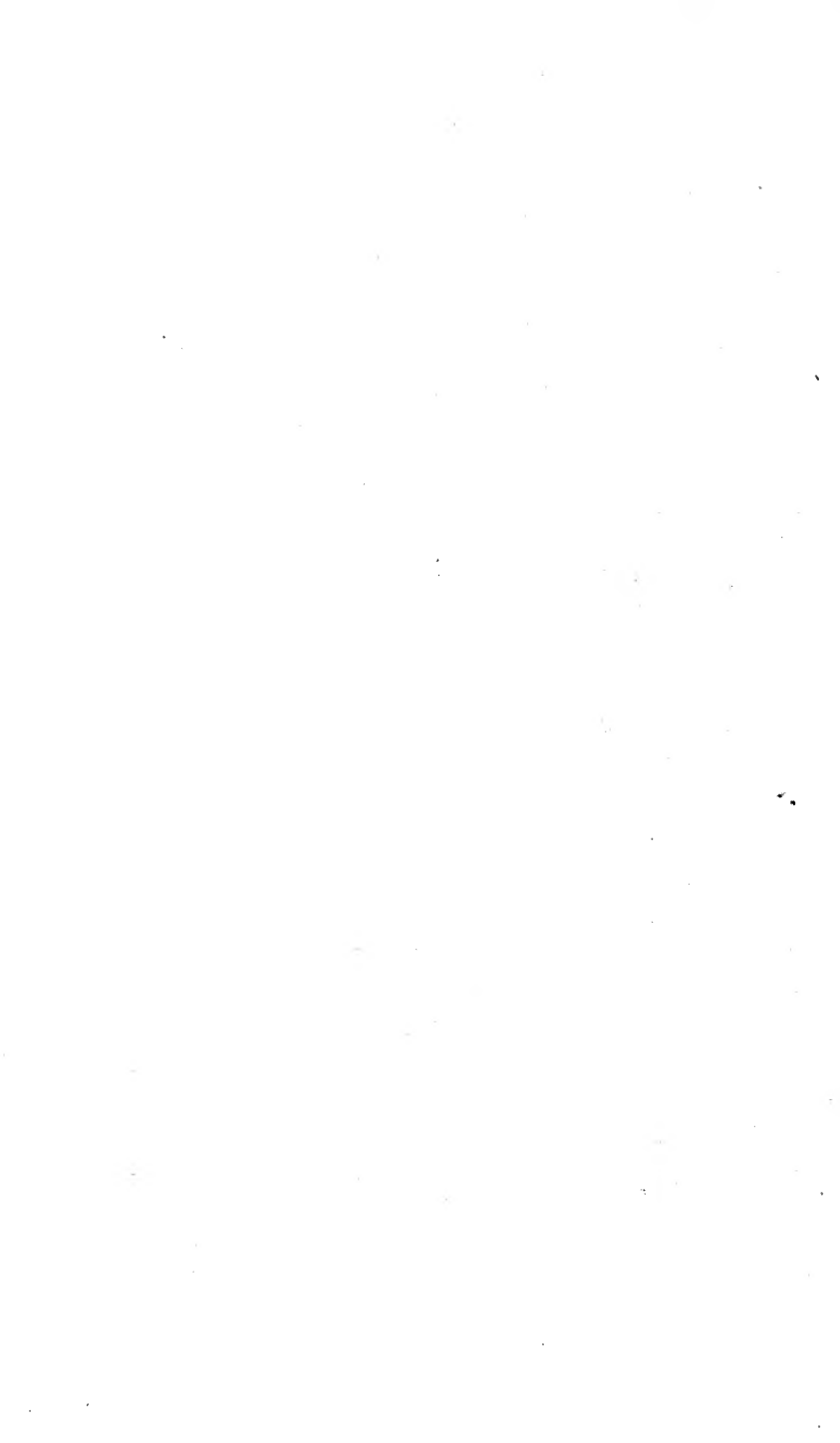




Published as the Act directs, by Bellamy & Co. No. 5, 1777.

W. H. W. sculp.







---

THE  
T E M P E S T.

---

# DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

## M E N.

ALONSO, *King of Naples.*

SEBASTIAN, *his Brother.*

PROSPERO, *the rightful Duke of Milan.*

ANTHONIO, *his Brother, the usurping Duke of Milan.*

FERDINAND, *Son to the King of Naples.*

GONZALO, *and honest old Counsellor of Naples.*

ADRIAN, }

FRANCISCO, } *Lords.*

CALIBAN, *a savage and deformed Slave.*

TRINCULO, *a Jester.*

STEPHANO, *a drunken Butler.*

*Master of a Ship, Boatswain, and Mariners.*

## W O M E N.

MIRANDA, *Daughter to Prospero.*

ARIEL, *an airy Spirit.*

IRIS,

CERES,

JUNO,

*Nymphs,*

*Reapers.*

} *Spirits.*

*Other Spirits attending on Prospero.*

SCENE, *the Sea, with a Ship; afterwards, an uninhabited Island.*

---

# T E M P E S T.

---

## ACT I. SCENE I.

*On a Ship at Sea. A tempestuous Noise of Thunder and Lightning heard. Enter a Ship-Master and a Boatswain.*

MASTER.

**B**OATSWAIN,—

*Boatsf.* Here, master: What cheer?

*Mastr.* Good: speak to the mariners:—fall to't yarely, or we run ourselves aground: bestir, bestir. [Exit.

*Enter MARINERS.*

*Boatsf.* Heigh, my hearts; cheerly, cheerly, my hearts; yare, yare: Take in the top-sail; Tend to the master's whistle;—Blow till thou burst thy wind, if room enough!

*Enter ALONSO, SEBASTIAN, ANTHONIO, FERDINAND, GONZALO, and others.*

*Alon.* Good boatswain, have care. Where's the master? Play the men.

*Boatsf.* I pray now, keep below.

*Ant.* Where is the master, boatswain?

*Boatsf.* Do you not hear him? You mar our labour; Keep your cabins: you do assist the storm.

*Gon.* Nay, good, be patient.

*Boatsf.* When the sea is. Hence! What care these roarers for the name of king? To cabin; silence: trouble us not.

*Gon.* Good; yet remember whom thou hast aboard.

*Boatsf.* None that I more love than myself. You are a counsellor; if you can command these elements to silence, and work the peace of the present, we will not handle a rope more; use your authority. If you cannot, give thanks you have liv'd so long, and make yourself ready in

your cabbin for the mischance of the hour, if it so hap.—  
Cheerly, good hearts—Out of our way, I say.

*Gon.* I have great comfort from this fellow: methinks, he hath no drowning mark upon him; his complexion is perfect gallows. Stand fast, good fate, to his hanging; make the rope of his destiny our cable, for our own doth little advantage: If he be not born to be hang'd, our case is miserable. *[Exeunt.]*

*Re-enter* BOATSWAIN.

*Boatsf.* Down with the top-mast; yare, lower, lower; bring her to try with main-course. *[A cry within.]*  
A plague upon this howling! they are louder than the weather, or our office.—

*Re-enter* SEBASTIAN, ANTHONIO, and GONZALO.

Yet again what do you here? Shall we give o'er and drown? have you a mind to sink?

*Seb.* A pox o' your throat! you bawling, blasphemous, uncharitable dog!

*Boatsf.* Work you then.

*Ant.* Hang, cur, hang! you whoreson, insolent, noise-maker! we are less afraid to be drown'd, than thou art.

*Gon.* I'll warrant him from drowning; though the ship were no stronger than a nut-shell, and as leaky as an un-stanch'd wench.

*Boatsf.* Lay her a-hold, a-hold; set her two courses; off to sea again, lay her off.

*Enter Mariners wet.*

*Mar.* All lost! to prayers, to prayers! all lost!

*[Exeunt.]*

*Boatsf.* What, must our mouths be cold?

*Gon.* The king and prince at prayers! let us assist them, For our case is as theirs.

*Seb.* I am out of patience.

*Ant.* We are merely cheated of our lives by drunkards.—

This wide-chop'd rascal;—Would, thou might'st lie drowning.

The washing of ten tides!

*Gon.* He'll be hang'd yet;  
Though every drop of water swear against it,  
And gape at wid'ft to glut him.  
[*A confused noise within*] Mercy on us!—  
We split, we split!—Farewel, my wife and children!  
—Farewel, brother!—We split, we split, we split—

*Ant.* Let's all sink with the king. [Exit.]

*Seb.* Let's take leave of him. [Exit.]

*Gon.* Now would I give a thousand furlongs of sea for  
an acre of barren ground; long heath, brown furze, any  
thing: The wills above be done, but I would fain die  
a dry death! [Exit.]

S C E N E II.

*The enchanted Island: before the Cell of PROSPERO.*

*Enter PROSPERO and MIRANDA.*

*Mira.* If by your art, my dearest father, you have  
Put the wild waters in this roar, allay them:  
The sky, it seems, would pour down stinking pitch,  
But that the sea, mounting to the welkin's cheek,  
Dashes the fire out. O, I have suffer'd  
With those that I saw suffer! a brave vessel,  
Who had, no doubt, some noble creatures in her,  
Dash'd all to pieces. O, the cry did knock  
Against my very heart! Poor souls! they perish'd  
Had I been any god of power, I would  
Have sunk the sea within the earth, or ere  
It should the good ship so have swallow'd, and  
The freighting souls within her.

*Pro.* Be collected;  
No more amazement: tell your piteous heart,  
There's no harm done.

*Mira.* O, woe the day!

*Pro.* No harm.  
I have done nothing but in care of thee,  
(Of thee, my dear one! thee, my daughter) who  
Art ignorant of what thou art, nought knowing  
Of whence I am; nor that I am more better

Than *Prospero*, master of a full poor cell,  
And thy no greater father.

*Mira.* More to know

Did never meddle with my thoughts.

*Pro.* 'Tis time,

I should inform thee further. Lend thy hand,  
And pluck my magic garment from me.—So;

[*Lays down his mantle.*]

Lye there my art.—Wipe thou thine eyes; have comfort.

The direful spectacle of the wreck, which touch'd

The very virtue of compassion in thee,

I have with such provision in mine art

So safely order'd, that there is no soul—

No, not so much perdition as an hair,

Betide to any creature in the vessel

Which thou heard'st cry, which thou saw'st sink. Sit down:

For thou must now know further.

*Mira.* You have often

Begun to tell me what I am; but stopp'd,

And left me to a bootless inquisition;

Concluding, *Stay, not yet.*—

*Pro.* The hour's now come;

The very minute bids thee ope thine ear;

Obey, and be attentive. Canst thou remember

A time before we came unto this cell?

I do not think thou canst; for then thou wast not

Out three years old.

*Mira.* Certainly, sir, I can.

*Pro.* By what? by any other house, or person?

Of any thing the image tell me, that

Hath kept with thy remembrance.

*Mira.* 'Tis far off;

And rather like a dream, than an assurance

That my remembrance warrants: Had I not

Four or five women once, that tended me?

*Pro.* Thou had'st, and more, *Miranda*: But how is it,

That this lives in thy mind? What see'st thou else

In the dark back-ward and abyss of time?

If thou remember'st aught, ere thou cam'st here,

How thou cam'st here, thou may'st.

*Mira.* But that I do not.

*Pro.* Twelve years since, *Miranda*, twelve years since,  
Thy father was the duke of Milan, and  
A prince of power.

*Mira.* Sir, are not you my father?

*Pro.* Thy mother was a piece of virtue, and  
She said—thou wast my daughter; and thy father  
Was duke of Milan; thou his only heir  
And prince, no worse issu'd.

*Mira.* O the heavens!  
What foul play had we, that we came from thence;  
Or blessed was't, we did?

*Pro.* Both, both, my girl;  
By foul play, as thou say'st, were we heav'd thence;  
But blessedly help hither.

*Mira.* O, my heart bleeds  
To think o' the teen that I have turn'd you to,  
Which is from my remembrance! Please you further.

*Pro.* My brother, and thy uncle, called *Antonio*,—  
I pray thee, mark me,—that a brother should  
Be so perfidious!—he whom, next thyself,  
Of all the world I lov'd, and to him put  
The manage of my state; as, at that time  
Through all the signiories it was the first,  
And *Prospero* the prime duke; being so reputed  
In dignity, and, for the liberal arts,  
Without a parallel; those being all my study,  
The government I cast upon my brother,  
And to my state grew stranger, being transported,  
And wrapp'd in secret studies. Thy false uncle—  
Dost thou attend me?

*Mira.* Sir, most heedfully.

*Pro.* Being once perfected how to grant suits,  
How to deny them; whom to advance, and whom  
To trash for over-topping; new created  
The creatures that were mine, I say, or chang'd 'em,  
Or else new form'd 'em: having both the key  
Of officer and office, set all hearts i' the state  
To what tune pleas'd his ear; that now he was  
The ivy, which had hid my princely trunk,  
And suck'd my verdure out on't.—Thou attend'st not.

*Mira.* O good sir, I do.

*Pro.* I pray thee, mark me.

I thus neglecting worldly ends, all dedicated  
To closeness, and the bettering of my mind  
With that, which, but by being so retir'd,  
O'er priz'd all popular rate, in my false brother  
Awak'd an evil nature: and my trust,  
Like a good parent, did beget of him  
A falsehood, in its contrary as great  
As my trust was; which had, indeed, no limit,  
A confidence sans bound. He being thus lorded,  
Not only with what my revenue yielded,  
But what my power might else exact,—like one,  
Who having unto truth, by telling of it,  
Made such a sinner of his memory,  
To credit his own lie,—he did believe  
He was, indeed, the duke; out of the substitution,  
And executing the outward face of royalty,  
With all prerogative:—Hence his ambition growing,—  
Dost thou hear?

*Mira.* Your tale, sir, would cure deafness.

*Pro.* To have no screen between this part he play'd  
And him he play'd it for, he needs will be  
Absolute Milan: Me, poor man!—my library  
Was dukedom large enough; of temporal royalties  
He thinks me now incapable: confederates,  
So dry he was for sway, with the king of Naples  
To give him annual tribute, do him homage;  
Subject his coronet to his crown, and bend  
The dukedom yet unbow'd (alas, poor Milan!)  
To most ignoble stooping.

*Mira.* O the heavens!

*Pro.* Mark this condition, and the event; then tell me,  
If this might be a brother.

*Mira.* I should fin  
To think but nobly of my grandmother:  
Good wombs have borne bad sons.

*Pro.* Now the condition.  
This king of Naples being an enemy  
To me inveterate, hearkens my brother's suit;  
Which was, that he in lieu o' the premises,—  
Of homage, and I know not how much tribute,—



Should presently extirpate me and mine  
Out of the dukedom; and confer fair Milan,  
With all the honours, on my brother: Whereon,  
A treacherous army levy'd, one midnight,  
Fated to the purpose, did *Antonio* open  
The gates of Milan; and i'the dead of darkness,  
The ministers for the purpose hurried thence  
Me, and thy crying self.

*Mira.* Alack, for pity!

I, not remembering how I cry'd out then,  
Will cry it o'er again; it is a hint,  
That wrings mine eyes to't.

*Pro.* Hear a little further.

And then I'll bring thee to the present business  
Which now's upon us; without the which, this story  
Were most impertinent.

*Mira.* Wherefore did they not  
That hour destroy us?

*Pro.* Well demanded, wench;  
My tale provokes that question. Dear, they durst not  
(So dear the love my people bore me); nor let  
A mark so bloody on the business; but  
With colours fairer painted their foul ends.  
In few, they hurried us aboard a bark;  
Bore us some leagues to sea; where they prepar'd  
A rotten carcase of a boat; not rigg'd,  
Nor tackle, sail, nor mast; the very rats  
Instinctively had quit it: there they hoist us  
To cry to the sea that roar'd to us: to sigh  
To the winds, whose pity, sighing back again,  
Did us but loving wrong.

*Mira.* Alack! what trouble  
Was I then to you!

*Pro.* O! a cherubim  
Thou wast, that did preserve me! Thou didst smile,  
Infused with a fortitude from heaven,  
When I have deck'd the sea with drops full salt;  
Under my burden groan'd; which rais'd in me  
An undergoing stomach to bear up  
Against what should ensue.

*Mira.* How came we ashore?

*Pro.* By Providence divine.  
Some food we had, and some fresh water, that

A noble Neapolitan, *Gonzalo*,  
 Out of his charity, who being then appointed  
 Master of this design, did give us ; with  
 Rich garments, linens, stuffs, and necessaries,  
 Which since have steaded much : so, of his gentleness,  
 Knowing I lov'd my books, he furnish'd me,  
 From my own library, with volumes that  
 I prize above my dukedom.

*Mira.* Would I might  
 But ever see that man !

*Pro.* Now, I arise :—  
 Sit still, and hear the last of our sea-forrow.  
 Here in this island we arriv'd ; and here  
 Have I, thy school-master, made thee more profit  
 Than other princes can, that have more time  
 For vainer hours, and tutors not so careful.

*Mira.* Heavens thank you for't !—And now, I pray  
 you, sir,  
 (For still 'tis beating in my mind) your reason  
 For raising this sea-storm ?

*Pro.* Know thus far forth.—  
 By accident most strange, bountiful Fortune.  
 Now, my dear lady, hath mine enemies  
 Brought to this shore : and by my prescience  
 I find my zenith doth depend upon  
 A most auspicious star ; whose influence  
 If now I court not, but omit, my fortunes  
 Will ever after droop.—Here cease more questions :  
 Thou art inclin'd to sleep ; 'tis a good dulness,  
 And give it way :—I know, thou canst not choose.—

[*Miranda sleeps.*]

Come away, servant, come : I am ready now :  
 Approach my *Ariel*, come.

*Enter ARIEL.*

*Ariel.* All hail, great master ! grave sir, hail ! I come  
 To answer thy best pleasure ; be't to fly,  
 To swim, to dive into the fire, to ride  
 On the curl'd clouds ; to thy strong bidding, task  
*Ariel*, and all his quality.

*Pro.* Hast thou, spirit,  
 Perform'd to point the tempest that I bade thee ?

*Ari.* To every article.

I boarded the king's ship; now on the beak,  
Now in the waste, the deck, in every cabin,  
I flam'd amazement: Sometimes, I'd divide,  
And burn in many places; on the top-mast,  
The yards, and bolt-sprit, would I flame distinctly,  
Then meet, and join: Jove's lightnings, the precursors  
O' the dreadful thunder-clap, more momentary  
And sight-out-running were not; the fire, and cracks  
Of sulphurous roaring, the most mighty Neptune  
Seem'd to besiege, and make his bold waves tremble;  
Yea, his dread trident shake.

*Pro.* My brave spirit!

Who was so firm, so constant, that this coil  
Would not infect his reason?

*Ari.* Not a foul

But felt a fever of the mad, and play'd  
Some tricks of desperation: All, but mariners,  
Plung'd in the foaming brine and quit the vessel,  
Then all a-fire with me: the king's son, *Ferdinand*,  
With hair up-staring (then like reeds, not hair)  
Was the first man that leap'd; cried, *Hell is empty,*  
*And all the devils are here.*

*Pro.* Why, that's my spirit!

But was not this nigh shore?

*Ari.* Close by, my master,

*Pro.* But are they, *Ariel*, safe?

*Ari.* Not a hair perish'd;

On their sustaining garments not a blemish,  
But fresher than before: and, as thou bad'st me,  
In troops I have dispers'd them 'bout the isle:  
The king's son have I landed by himself;  
Whom I left cooling of the air with sighs,  
In an odd angle of the isle, and sitting,  
His arms in this sad knot.

*Pro.* Of the king's ship,

The mariners, say how thou hast dispos'd,  
And all the rest o' the fleet?

*Ari.* Safely in harbour

Is the king's ship; in the deep nook, where once  
Thou call'dst me up at midnight to fetch dew  
From the still vex'd Bermoothes, there she's hid;  
The mariners all under hatches stow'd,

Whom, with a charm join'd to their suffer'd labour,  
 I have left asleep: and for the rest o' the fleet,  
 Which I dispers'd, they all have met again:  
 And are upon the Mediterranean flote,  
 Bound sadly home for Naples;  
 Supposing that they saw the king's ship wreck'd,  
 And his great person perish.

*Pro.* *Ariel*, thy charge  
 Exactly is perform'd; but there's more work:  
 What is the time o' the day?

*Ari.* Past the mid season.

*Pro.* At least two glasses: The time 'twixt six and now,  
 Must by us both be spent most precious.

*Ari.* Is there more toil? Since thou dost give me pains  
 Let me remember thee what thou hast promis'd,  
 Which is not yet perform'd me.

*Pro.* How now? moody?  
 What is't thou can't demand?

*Ari.* My liberty.

*Pro.* Before the time be out? no more.

*Ari.* I pray thee:  
 Remember, I have done thee worthy service:  
 Told thee no lies, made thee no mistaking; serv'd  
 Without or grudge, or grumblings: thou didst promise  
 To bate me a full year.

*Pro.* Dost thou forget  
 From what a torment I did free thee?

*Ari.* No.

*Pro.* Thou dost; and think'st it much, to tread the ooze  
 Of the salt deep;  
 To run upon the sharp wind of the north;  
 To do me business in the veins o' the earth,  
 When it is bak'd with frost.

*Ari.* I do not, sir.

*Pro.* Thou ly'st, malignant thing! Hast thou forgot  
 The foul witch *Sycorax*, who, with age, and envy,  
 Was grown into a hoop? hast thou forgot her?

*Ari.* No, sir.

*Pro.* Thou hast: Where was she born? speak; tell me.

*Ari.* Sir, in Argier.

*Pro.* Oh, was she so? I must,  
 Once in a month, recount what thou hast been,  
 Which thou forget'st. This damn'd witch, *Sycorax*,

For mischiefs manifold, and forceries terrible  
To enter human hearing, from Argier,  
Thou know'st, was banish'd ; for one thing she did,  
They would not take her life : Is not this true ?

*Ari.* Ay, sir.

*Pro.* This blue-ey'd hag was hither brought with child,  
And here was left by th' sailors : Thou, my slave,  
As thou report'st thyself, wast then her servant :  
And, for thou wast a spirit too delicate  
To act her earthly and abhorr'd commands,  
Refusing her grand hests, she did confine thee,  
By help of her more potent ministers,  
And in her most unmitigable rage,  
Into a cloven pine ; within which rift  
Imprison'd thou didst painfully remain  
A dozen years ; within which space she died,  
And left thee there ; where thou didst vent thy groans  
As fast as mill-wheels strike : Then was this island  
(Save for the son that she did litter here,  
A freckled whelp, hag-born), not honour'd with  
A human shape.

*Ari.* Yes ; *Caliban* her son.

*Pro.* Dull thing, I say so ; he, that *Caliban*,  
Whom now I keep in service. Thou best know'st  
What torment I did find thee in : thy groans  
Did make wolves howl, and penetrate the breasts  
Of ever-angry bears ; it was a torment  
To lay upon the damn'd, which *Sycorax*  
Could not again undo ; it was mine art,  
When I arriv'd, and heard thee, that made gape  
The pine, and let thee out.

*Ari.* I thank thee, master.

*Pro.* If thou more murmur'st, I will rend an oak,  
And peg thee in his knotty entrails, till  
Thou hast howl'd away twelve winters.

*Ari.* Pardon, master :

I will be correspondent to command,  
And do my spiriting gently.

*Pro.* Do so ; and after two days  
I will discharge thee.

*Ari.* That's my noble master !

What shall I do ? say what ? what shall I do ?

*Pro.* Go make thyself like to a nymph o' the sea:  
Be subject to no sight but thine and mine; invisible  
To every eye-ball else. Go, take this shape,  
And hither come in it: go, hence, with diligence.

[*Exit* ARIEL.]

Awake, dear heart, awake! thou hast slept well;  
Awake!

*Mira.* The strangeness of your story put  
Heaviness in me.

*Pro.* Shake it off: come on;  
We'll visit *Caliban*, my slave, who never  
Yields us kind answer.

*Mira.* 'Tis a villain, sir,  
I do not love to look on.

*Pro.* But, as 'tis,  
We cannot miss him: he does make our fire,  
Fetch in our wood; and serves in offices  
That profit us. What ho! slave *Caliban*!  
Thou earth, thou! speak.

*Cal.* (*Within.*) There's wood enough within.

*Pro.* Come forth, I say; there's other business for thee:  
Come, thou tortoise! when?

*Enter* ARIEL like a Water-Nymph.

Fine apparition! My quaint *Ariel*,  
Hark in thine ear.

*Ari.* My lord, it shall be done. [Exit.]

*Pro.* Thou poisonous slave, got by the devil himself  
Upon thy wicked dam, come forth!

*Enter* CALIBAN.

*Cal.* As wicked dew, as e'er my mother brush'd  
With raven's feather from unwholesome fen,  
Drop on you both! a south-west blow on ye,  
And blister you all o'er!

*Pro.* For this, be sure, to-night thou shalt have cramps,  
Side-stitches that shall pen thy breath up; urchins  
Shall, for that vast of night that they may work,  
All exercise on thee: thou shalt be pinch'd  
As thick as honey-combs, each pinch more stinging  
Than bees that made 'em.

*Cal.* I must eat my dinner.

This island's mine, by *Sycorax* my mother,  
Which thou tak'st from me. When thou cam'st first,  
Thou stroak'dst me, and mad'st much of me; wouldst give me  
Water with berries in't; and teach me how  
To name the bigger light, and how the less,  
That burn by day and night: and then I lov'd thee,  
And shew'd thee all the qualities o' the isle,  
The fresh springs, brine-pits, barren place, and fertile;  
Curs'd be I, that I did so!—All the charms  
Of *Sycorax*, toads, beetles, bats, light on you!  
For I am all the subjects that you have,  
Who first was mine own king; and here you sty me  
In this hard rock, while you do keep from me  
The rest of the island.

*Pro.* Thou most lying slave,  
Whom stripes may move, not kindness: I have us'd thee,  
Filth as thou art, with human care; and lodg'd thee  
In mine own cell, till thou didst seek to violate  
The honour of my child.

*Cal.* Oh ho, ho ho!—Would it had been done!  
Thou didst prevent me; I had peopled else  
This isle with *Calibans*.

*Pro.* Abhorred slave;  
Which any print of goodness will not take,  
Being capable of all ill! I pitied thee,  
Took pains to make thee speak, taught thee each hour  
One thing or other: when thou didst not, savage,  
Know thy own meaning, but would'st gabble like  
A thing more brutish, I endow'd thy purposes  
With words that made them known: But thy vile race,  
Though thou did'st learn, had that in't which good natures  
Could not abide to be with; therefore wast thou  
Deservedly confin'd into this rock,  
Who hadst deserv'd more than a prison.

*Cal.* You taught me language; and my profit on't  
Is, I know how to curse: The red plague rid you,  
For learning me your language!

*Pro.* Hag-seed, hence!  
Fetch us in fewel; and be quick, thou wer't best,  
To answer other business. Shrug'st thou malice?  
If thou neglect'st, or dost unwillingly

What I command, I'll rack thee with old cramps;  
 Fill all thy bones with aches; make thee roar,  
 That beasts shall tremble at thy din.

*Cal.* No 'pray thee!—  
 I must obey: his art is of such power, [Aside.  
 It would control my dam's god, *Setebos*,  
 And make a vassal of him.

*Pro.* So, slave; hence! [Exit CALIBAN.

*Enter FERDINAND at the remotest part of the stage, and ARIEL  
 invisible, playing and singing.*

ARIEL'S Song.

*Come unto these yellow sands,  
 And then take hands:  
 Court'sied you have, and kiss'd,  
 (The wild waves whilst)  
 Foot it featly here and there;  
 And sweet sprites the burden bear.  
 Hark, hark!*

*Bur.* Bowgh, wowgh, [dispersedly.

*The watch-dogs bark:*

*Bur.* Bowgh, wowgh.

*Hark, hark! I hear*

*The strain of strutting chanticler  
 Cry, Cock-a-doodle-doo.*

*Fer.* Where should this music be? i' the air, or the earth?  
 It sounds no more'—and sure, it waits upon  
 Some god of the island. Sitting on a bank,  
 Weeping again the king my father's wreck,  
 This music crept by me upon the waters;  
 Allaying both their fury, and my passion,  
 With its sweet air; thence I have follow'd it,  
 Or it hath drawn me rather:—But 'tis gone.  
 No, it begins again.

ARIEL'S Song.

*Full fathom five thy father lies,  
 Of his bones are coral made;  
 Those are pearls, that were his eyes:  
 Nothing of him that doth fade,*



*Both doth suffer a sea-change,  
 Into something rich and strange.  
 Sea-nymphs hourly ring his knell.  
 Hark, now I hear them,—ding-dong, bell.*

*[Burden, ding-dong.]*

*Fer.* The ditty does remember my drown'd father:—  
 This is no mortal business, nor no sound  
 That the earth owes:—I hear it now above me.

*Pro.* The fringed curtains of thine eye advance,  
 And say, what thou seest yond'.

*Mira.* What is't? a spirit?  
 Lord, how it looks about! Believe me, fir,  
 It carries a brave form:—But 'tis a spirit.

*Pro.* No, wench; it eats, and sleeps, and hath such  
 senses

As we have such: This gallant, which thou see'st,  
 Was in the wreck; and, but he's something stain'd  
 With grief, that's beauty's canker, thou might'st call him  
 A goodly person: he hath lost his fellows,  
 And strays about to find them.

*Mira.* I might call him  
 A thing divine; for nothing natural  
 I ever saw so noble.

*Pro.* It goes on, I see, *[Aside.]*  
 As my soul prompts it:—Spirit, fine spirit, I'll free thee  
 Within two days for this.

*Fer.* Most sure, the goddess  
 On whom these airs attend!—Vouchsafe, my prayer  
 May know, if you remain upon this island;  
 And that you will some instruction give,  
 How I may bear me here; My prime request,  
 Which I do last pronounce, is, O you wonder!  
 If you be maid, or no?

*Mira.* No wonder, Sir;  
 But, certainly a maid!

*Fer.* My language! heavens!—  
 I am the best of them that speak this speech,  
 Where I but where 'tis spoken.

*Pro.* How! the best?  
 What wert thou, if the king of Naples heard thee?

*Fer.* A single thing, as I am now, that wonders  
To hear thee speak of Naples: He does hear me;  
And, that he does, I weep: myself am Naples;  
Who with mine eyes, ne'er since at ebb, beheld  
The king my father wreck'd,

*Mira.* Alack, for mercy!

*Fer.* Yes, faith, and all his Lords; the duke of Milan,  
And his brave son being twain.

*Pro.* The duke of Milan,  
And his more braver daughter, could controul thee,  
If now 'twere fit to do 't:—At the first fight  
[*Aside to ARIEL.*

They have chang'd eyes:—Delicate *Ariel*,  
I'll set thee free for this.—A word, good sir;  
I fear, you have done yourself some wrong: a word—

*Mira.* Why speaks my father so ungently? This  
Is the third man that I e'er saw; the first,  
That e'er I figh'd for: pity move my father  
To be inclin'd my way!

*Fer.* O, if a virgin,  
And your affection not gone forth, I'll make you  
The queen of Naples.

*Pro.* Soft, Sir, one word more.—  
They are both in either's powers: but this swift business  
I must uneasy make, lest too light winning [ *Aside.*  
Make the prize light.—One word more; I charge thee,  
That thou attend me: thou dost here usurp  
The name thou ow'st not; and hast put thyself  
Upon this island, as a spy, to win it  
From me, the lord on't.

*Fer.* No, as I am a man.

*Mira.* There's nothing ill can dwell in such a temple:  
If the ill spirit have so fair an house,  
Good things will strive to dwell with't.

*Pro.* [ *To Fred.* ] Follow me.—  
Speak not you for him; he's a traitor.—Come,  
I'll manacle thy neck and feet together:  
Sea-water shalt thou drink, thy food shall be  
The fresh-brook muscles, wither'd roots, and husks  
Wherein the acorn cradled: Follow.

*Fer.* No;

I will resist such entertainment, 'till  
Mine enemy has more power.

[*He draws.*

*Mira.* O dear father,  
Make not too rash a trial of him, for  
He's gentle, and not fearful.

*Pro.* What, I say,  
My foot my tutor?—put thy sword up, traitor;  
Who mak'st a shew, but dar'st not strike, thy conscience  
Is so possess'd with guilt: come from thy ward;  
For I can here disarm thee with this stick,  
And make thy weapon drop.

*Mira.* Beseech you father!

*Pro.* Hence; hang not on my garments.

*Mira.* Sir, have pity;  
I'll be his surety.

*Pro.* Silence: one word more  
Shall make me chide thee, if not hate thee. What,  
An advocate for an impostor? hush!  
Thou think'st, there are no more such shapes as he,  
Having seen but him and *Caliban*; Foolish wench!  
To the most of men this is a *Caliban*,  
And they to him are angels.

*Mira.* My affections  
Are then most humble; I have no ambition  
To see a goodlier man:

*Pro.* Come on; obey; [To *Ferdinand*;  
Thy nerves are in their infancy again,  
And have no vigour in them:

*Fer.* So they are:  
My spirits, as in a dream, are all bound up.  
My father's loss, the weakness which I feel,  
The wreck of all my friends, or this man's threats,  
To whom I am subdu'd, are but light to me,  
Might I but through my prison once a day  
Behold this maid: all corners else o' the earth  
Let liberty make use of; space enough  
Have I, in such a prison.

*Pro.* It works:—Come on.  
[To *Ariel*.] Thou hast done well, fine *Ariel*!—Follow me.  
Hark, what thou else shalt do me.

*Mira.* Be of comfort ;  
My father's of a better nature, Sir,  
Then he appears by speech ; this is unwonted,  
Which now came from him.

*Pro.* Thou shalt be as free *To ARIEL.*  
As mountain winds : but then exactly do  
All points of my command.

*Ari.* To the syllable.

*Pro.* Come, follow : Speak not for him. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.—SCENE I.

*Another part of the Island. Enter ALONSO, SEBASTIAN,  
ANTHONIO, GONZALO, ADRIAN, FRANCISCO,  
and others.*

*Gonzalo.*

**B**ESEECH you, Sir, be merry : you have cause  
(So have we all) of joy ; for our escape  
Is much beyond our loss : Our hint of woe  
Is common ; every day, some sailer's wife,  
The master of some merchant, and the merchant,  
Have just our theme of woe : but for the miracle,  
I mean our preservation, few in millions  
Can speak like us : then wisely, good Sir, weigh  
Our sorrow with our comfort.

*Alon.* Pr'ythee, peace.

*Seb.* He receives comfort like cold porridge.

*Ant.* The visitor will not give him o'er so.

*Seb.* Look, he's winding up the watch of his wit :  
by and by it will strike.

*Gon.* Sir,—

*Seb.* One:—Tell.

*Gon.* When every grief is entertain'd, that's offer'd,  
Comes to the entertainer—

*Seb.* A dollar.

*Gon.* Dolour comes to him, indeed ; you have spoken  
truer than you propos'd.

*Seb.* You have taken it wiser than I meant you  
would.

Therefore, my lord,—

*Ant.* Fie, what a spend-thrift is he of his tongue !

*Alon.* I pr'ythee, spare.

*Gon.* Well, I have done; But yet——

*Seb.* He will be talking.

*Ant.* Which of them, he, or *Adrian*, for a good wager, first begins to crow?

*Seb.* The old cock.

*Ant.* The cockrel.

*Seb.* Done: the wager?

*Ant.* A laughter.

*Seb.* A match.

*Adr.* Though this island seem to be desert,—

*Seb.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Ant.* So, you've pay'd.

*Adr.* Uninhabitable, and almost inaccessible.—

*Seb.* Yet,

*Adr.* Yet——

*Ant.* He could not miss't.

*Adr.* It must needs be of subtle, tender, and delicate temperance

*Ant.* Temperance was a delicate wench.

*Seb.* Ay, and a subtle; as he most learnedly deliver'd.

*Adr.* The air breaths upon us here most sweetly

*Seb.* As if it had lungs, and rotten ones.

*Ant.* Or, as 'twere perfum'd by a fen.

*Gon.* Here is every thing advantageous to life.

*Ant.* True; save means to live.

*Seb.* Of that there's none, or little.

*Gon.* How lush and lusty the grass looks? how green?

*Ant.* The ground, indeed, is tawny.

*Seb.* With an eye of green in't.

*Ant.* He misses not much.

*Seb.* No; he doth but mistake the truth totally.

*Gon.* But the rarity of it is (which is, indeed, almost beyond credit)——

*Seb.* As many vouch'd rarities are——

*Gon.* That our garments, being, as they were, drench'd in the sea, hold notwithstanding their freshness, and glosses; being rather new dy'd, than stain'd with salt-water.

*Ant.* If but one of his pockets could speak, would it not say, he lies?

*Seb.* Ay, or very falsely pocket up his report.

*Gon.* Methinks, our garments are now as fresh as when we put them on first in Africk, at the marriage of the king's fair daughter *Claribel* to the king of *Tunis*.

*Seb.* 'Twas a sweet marriage, and we prosper well in our return.

*Adr.* *Tunis* was never grac'd before with such a paragon to their queen.

*Gon.* Not since widow *Dido*'s time.

*Ant.* Widow? a pox o' that! How came that widow in? Widow *Dido*!

*Seb.* What if he had said, widower *Æneas* too? good lord, how you take it!

*Adr.* Widow *Dido*, said you? you make me study of that: she was of *Carthage*, not of *Tunis*.

*Gon.* This *Tunis*, sir, was *Carthage*.

*Adr.* *Carthage*.

*Gon.* I assure you, *Carthage*.

*Ant.* His word is more than the miraculous harp.

*Seb.* He hath rais'd the wall, and houses too.

*Ant.* What impossible matter will he make easy next?

*Seb.* I think, he will carry this island home in his pocket, and give it his son for an apple.

*Ant.* And, sowing the kernels of it in the sea, bring forth more islands.

*Gon.* Ay?

*Ant.* Why, in good time.

*Gon.* Sir, we were talking, that our garments seem now as fresh, as when we were at *Tunis* at the marriage of your daughter, who is now queen.

*Ant.* And the rarest that e'er came there.

*Seb.* 'Bate, I beseech you, widow *Dido*.

*Ant.* O, widow *Dido*; ay, widow *Dido*.

*Gon.* Is not, sir, my doublet, as fresh as the first day I wore it? I mean, in a fort.

*Ant.* That fort was well fish'd for.

*Gon.* When I wore it at your daughter's marriage?

*Alon.* You cram these words into mine ears, against The stomach of my sense: 'Would I had never Marry'd my daughter there! for, coming thence, My son is lost; and, in my rate, the too,

Who is so far from Italy remov'd,  
I ne'er again shall see her. O thou mine heir  
Of Naples and of Milan, what strange fish  
Hath made his meal on thee!

*Fran.* Sir, he may live;  
I saw him beat the surges under him,  
And ride upon their backs; he trod the water.  
Whose enmity he flung aside, and breast'd  
The surge most swollen that met him: his bold head  
'Bove the contentious waves he kept, and oar'd  
Himself with his good arms in lusty stroke  
To the shore, that o'er his wave-worn basis bow'd,  
As stooping to relieve him: I not doubt,  
He came alive to land.

*Alon.* No, no, he's gone.

*Seb.* Sir, you may thank yourself for this great loss;  
That would not bless our Europe with your daughter,  
But rather lose her to an African;  
Where she, at least, is banish'd from your eye  
Who hath cause to wet the grief on't.

*Alon.* Pry'thee, peace.

*Seb.* You were kneel'd to, and importun'd otherwise  
By all of us; and the fair soul herself  
Weigh'd, between lothness and obedience, at  
Which end the beam should bow. We have lost your son,  
I fear, for ever: Milan and Naples have  
More widows in them of this business' making,  
Then we bring men to comfort them; the fault's  
Your own.

*Alon.* So is the dearest o' the loss.

*Gon.* My lord Sebastian,  
The truth you speak doth lack some gentleness,  
And a time to speak it in: you rub the sore,  
When you should bring the plaister.

*Seb.* Very well.

*Ant.* And most chirurgeonly.

*Gon.* It is foul wheather in us all, good sir,  
When you are cloudy.

*Seb.* Foul weather?

*Ant.* Very foul.

*Gon.* Had I the plantation of this isle, my lord,—

*Ant.* He'd sow't with nettle-feed.

*Seb.* Or docks, or mallows.

*Gon.* And were the king of it, what would I do?

*Seb.* 'Scape being drunk, for want of wine.

*Gon.* I' the commonwealth, I would by contraries  
Execute all things: for no kind of traffick  
Would I admit; no name of magistrate,  
Letters should not be known; riches, poverty,  
And use of service, none; contract, succession,  
Bourn, bound of land, tilth, vineyard, none;  
No use of metal, corn, or wine, or oil;  
No occupation; all men, idle all,  
And women too, but innocent and pure:  
No sovereignty.

*Seb.* And yet he would be king on't.

*Ant.* The latter end of his commonwealth forgets  
the beginning.

*Gon.* All things in common nature should produce  
Without sweat or endeavour: treason, felony,  
Sword, pike, knife, gun, or need of any engine,  
Would I not have; but nature should bring forth,  
Of its own kind, all foison, all abundance  
To feed my innocent people.

*Seb.* No marrying 'mong his subjects?

*Ant.* None, man: all idle; whores, and knaves.

*Gon.* I would with such perfection govern, Sir,  
To excel the golden age.

*Seb.* 'Save his majesty!

*Ant.* Long live Gonzalo!

*Gon.* And, do you mark me, Sir?

*Alon.* Pr'ythee, no more; thou dost talk nothing to me.

*Gon.* I do well believe your highness; and did it to  
minister occasion to these gentlemen, who are of such  
sensible and nimble lungs, that they always use to laugh at  
nothing.

*Ant.* 'Twas you we laugh'd at.

*Gon.* Who, in this kind of merry fooling, am nothing  
to you: so you may continue, and laugh at nothing still,

*Ant.* What a blow was there given?

*Seb.* And it had not fallen flat-long;



*Gon.* You are, gentlemen, of brave metal; you would lift the moon out of her sphere, if she would continue in it five weeks without changing.

*Enter ARIEL, playing solemn Music.*

*Seb.* We would so, and then go a bat-fowling.

*Ant.* Nay, my good lord, be not angry.

*Gon.* No, I warrant you; I will not adventure my discretion so weakly. Will you laugh me asleep, for I am very heavy?

*Ant.* Go, sleep, and hear us.

[*GONZ. ADR. FRA, &c. sleeps.*]

*Alon.* What all so soon asleep! I wish mine eyes Would, with themselves, shut up my thoughts: I find They are inclin'd to do so.

*Seb.* Please you, sir,  
Do not omit the heavy offer of it:  
It seldom visits sorrow; when it doth,  
It is a comforter.

*Ant.* We two, my lord,  
Will guard your person, while you take your rest,  
And watch your safety.

*Alon.* Thank you: Wond'rous heavy——

[*All sleep but SEB. and ANT.*]

*Seb.* What a strange drowsiness possesses them?

*Ant.* It is the quality o' the climate.

*Seb.* Why  
Doth it not then our eye-lids sink? I find not  
Myself dispos'd to sleep.

*Ant.* Nor I; my spirits are nimble.  
They fell together all, as by consent;  
They dropp'd, as by a thunder-stroke. What might,  
Worthy *Sebastian*?—O, what might?—No more:—  
And yet, methinks, I see it in thy face,  
What thou should'st be: the occasion speaks thee; and  
My strong imagination sees a crown  
Dropping upon thy head.

*Seb.* What, art thou waking?

*Ant.* Do you not hear me speak?

*Seb.* I do; and, surely,  
It is a sleepy language! and thou speak'st

Out of thy sleep: What is it thou didst say?  
 This is a strange repose. to be asleep  
 With eyes wide open; standing, speaking, moving;  
 And yet so fast asleep.

*Ant.* Noble *Sebastian*,  
 Thou let'st thy fortune sleep, die rather; wink'st  
 While thou art waking.

*Seb.* Thou dost snore distinctly;  
 There's meaning in thy snores.

*Ant.* I am more serious than my custom: you  
 Must be so too, if heed me; which to do,  
 Trebles thee o'er.

*Seb.* Well; I am standing water.

*Ant.* I'll teach you how to flow.

*Seb.* Do so; to ebb,  
 Hereditary sloth instructs me.

*Ant.* O,  
 If you but knew, how you the purpose cherish,  
 Whilst thus you mock it! how, in stripping it,  
 You more invest it! Ebbing men, indeed,  
 Most often do so near the bottom run,  
 By their own fear or sloth.

*Seb.* Pr'ythee, say on;  
 The setting of thine eye, and cheek, proclaim  
 A matter from thee; and a birth, indeed,  
 Which throes thee much to yield.

*Ant.* Thus, Sir:  
 Although this lord of weak remembrance, this,  
 (Who shall be of as little memory,  
 When he is earth'd (hath here almost persuaded  
 (For he's a spirit of persuasion, only  
 Professes to persuade) the king, his son's alive;  
 'Tis as impossible that he's undrown'd,  
 As he that sleeps here, swims.

*Seb.* I have no hope,  
 That he's undrown'd.

*Ant.* O, out of that no hope,  
 What great hope have you! no hope, that way, is  
 Another way so high an hope, that even  
 Ambition cannot pierce a wink beyond,  
 But doubts discovery there. Will you grant with me,  
 That *Ferdinand* is drown'd?

*Seb.* He's gone.

*Ant.* Then, tell me,  
Who's the next heir of Naples?

*Seb.* *Claribel.*

*Ant.* She that is queen of Tunis; she that dwells  
Ten leagues beyond man's life; she that from Naples  
Can have no note, unless the sun were post,  
(The man i' the moon's too slow) till new-born chins  
Be rough and razorable; she, from whom  
We were all sea-swallow'd, though some cast again;  
And, by that destiny, to perform an act,  
Whereof what's past is prologue; what to come,  
In yours, and my discharge.

*Seb.* What stuff is this?—How say you?  
'Tis true, my brother's daughter's queen of Tunis:  
So is she heir of Naples; 'twixt which regions  
There is some space.

*Ant.* A space, whose very cubit  
Seems to cry out, *How shall that Claribel*  
*Measure us back to Naples?*—Keep in Tunis,  
And let *Sebastian* wake!—Say, this were death  
That now hath seized them; why they were no worse  
Than now they are: There be that can rule Naples,  
As well as he that sleeps; lords, that can prate  
As amply, and unnecessarily,  
As this *Gonzalo*; I myself could make  
A chough of as deep chat. O, that you bore  
The mind that I do! what a sleep were this  
For your advancement! Do you understand me?

*Seb.* Methinks, I do.

*Ant.* And how does your content  
Tender your own good fortune?

*Seb.* I remember  
You did supplant your brother *Prospero*.

*Ant.* True;  
And, look how well my garments fit upon me;  
Much feater than before: My brother's servants  
Were then my fellows, now they are my men.

*Seb.* But, for your conscience—

*Ant.* Aye, Sir; where lies that? if it were a kybe,  
'Twould put me to my slipper: But I feel not  
This deity in my bosom: twenty consciences,

That stand 'twixt me and Milan, candy'd be they,  
 And melt, e'er they molest. Here lies your brother,  
 No better than the earth he lies upon,  
 If he were that which now he's like, that's dead;  
 Whom I with this obedient steel, three inches of it,  
 Can lay to bed for ever: whiles you, doing thus,  
 To the perpetual wink, for ay might put  
 This ancient morsel, this Sir Prudence, who  
 Should not upbraid our course. For all the rest,  
 They'll take suggestion, as a cat laps milk;  
 They'll tell the clock to any business that  
 We say befits the hour.

*Seb.* Thy case, dear friend,  
 Shall be my precedent; as thou got'st Milan,  
 I'll come by Naples. Draw thy sword: one stroke  
 Shall free thee from the tribute which thou pay'st:  
 And I the king shall love thee.

*Ant.* Draw together:  
 And when I rear my hand, do you the like  
 To fall it on *Gonzalo*.

*Seb.* Oh, but one word. *[They converse apart.]*

*Enter ARIEL, with Music and Song.*

*Ari.* My master through his art foresees the danger,  
 That you, his friend, are in; and sends me forth  
 (For else his project dies) to keep them living.

*[Sings in GONZALO's Ear.]*

*While you here do snoring lie,  
 Open-cy'd conspiracy  
 His time doth take:  
 If of life you keep a care,  
 Shake off slumber, and beware:  
 Awake! awake!*

*Ant.* Then let us both be fudden.

*Gon.* Now, good angels, preserve the king!

*[They wake.]*

*Alon.* Why, how now, ho! awake? Why are you  
 drawn?

Wherefore this ghastly looking?

*Gen.* What's the matter?

*Seb.* Whiles we stood here securing your repose,  
Even now, we heard a hollow burst of bellowing  
Like bulls, or rather lions; did it not wake you?  
It strook mine ear most terribly.

*Alon.* I heard nothing.

*Ant.* O, 'twas a din to fright a monster's ear;  
To make an earthquake! sure, 'twas the roar  
Of a whole heard of lions.

*Alon.* Heard you this, *Gonzalo*?

*Gon.* Upon my honour, Sir, I heard a humming,  
And that a strange one too, which did awake me:  
I shak'd you, Sir, and cry'd; as mine eyes open'd,  
I saw their weapons drawn:—there was a noise,  
That's verity: 'Tis best we stand upon our guard;  
Or that we quit this place: let's draw our weapons.

*Alon.* Lead off this ground; and let's make further search  
For my poor son.

*Gon.* Heavens keep him from these beasts!  
For he is, sure, i' the island.

*Alon.* Lead away.

*Ari.* *Prospero*, my lord, shall know what I have done.

So king, go safely on to seek thy son.

[*Aside.*  
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.

*Another part of the Island. Enter CALIBAN with a  
Burden of Wood: A Noise of Thunder heard.*

*Cal.* All the infections that the sun sucks up  
From bogs, fens, flats, on *Prosper* fall, and make him  
By inch-meal a disease! his spirits hear me,  
And yet I needs must curse. But they'll not pinch,  
Fright me with urchin shows, pitch me i' the mire,  
Nor lead me, like a fire-brand, in the dark  
Out of my way, unless he bid 'em; but  
For every trifle they are set upon me:  
Sometime like apes, that mow and chatter at me,  
And after, bite me; then like hedge-hogs, which  
Lie tumbling in my bare-foot way, and mount  
Their pricks at my foot-fall; sometime am

All wound with adders, who, with cloven tongues,  
Do hiss me into madness:—Lo! now! lo!

*Enter TRINCULO.*

Here comes a spirit of his; and to torment me,  
For bringing wood in slowly: I'll fall flat;  
Perchance, he will not mind me.

*Trin.* Here's neither bush nor shrub, to bear off any weather at all, and another storm brewing; I hear it sing i' the wind: yond' same black cloud, yond' huge one, looks like a foul bombard that would shed his liquor. If it should thunder, as it did before, I know not where to hide my head: yond' same cloud cannot chuse but fall by pail-fuls.—What have we here? a man or a fish? Dead or alive? A fish: he smells like a fish; a very ancient and fish-like smell; a kind of, not of the newest, Poor-John, A strange fish! Were I in England now (as once I was) and had but this fish painted, not a holiday fool there but would give a piece of silver: there would this monster make a man; any strange beast there makes a man: when they will not give a doit to relieve a lame beggar, they will lay out ten to see a dead Indian. Legg'd like a man! and his fins like arms! Warm o' my troth! I do now let loose my opinion, hold it no longer; this is no fish, but an islander, that has lately suffered by a thunder-bolt. Alas! the storm is come again: my best way is to creep under his gaberdine; there is no other shelter hereabout: Misery acquaints a man with strange bed-fellows: I will here shrowd, till the dregs of the storm be past.

*Enter STEPHANO singing; a Bottle in his Hand.*

*Ste.* *I shall no more to sea, to sea,  
Here shall I die a-shore,—*

This is a very scurvy tune to sing at a man's funeral:  
Well, here's my comfort. [Drinks.]

*The master, the swabber, the boatswain and I,  
The gunner and his mate,  
Lov'd Mall, Meg, and Marian, and Margery.  
But none of us car'd for Kate:*

*For she had a tongue with a tang,  
 Would cry to a sailor, Go hang:  
 She lov'd not the savour of tar nor of pitch,  
 Yet a taylor might scratch her where-e'er she did itch:  
 Then to sea, boys, and let her go hang.*

This is a scurvy tune too: But here's my comfort.

[*Drinks.*]

*Cal.* Do not torment me: Oh!

*Ste.* What's the matter? Have we devils here? Do you put tricks upon us with savages, and men of Inde? Ha! I have not 'scap'd drowning, to be afraid now of your four legs; for it hath been said, As proper a man as ever went upon four legs, cannot make him give ground: and it shall be said so again, while *Strepshano* breathes at nostrils.

*Cal.* The spirit torments me: Oh!

*Ste.* This is some monster of the isle, with four legs; who has got, as I take it, an ague: Where the devil should he learn our language? I will give him some relief, if it be but for that: If I can recover him, and keep him tame, and get to Naples with him, he's a present for any emperor that evertrod on neats-leather.

*Cal.* Do not torment me, pr'ythee; I'll bring my wood home faster.

*Ste.* He's in his fit now; and does not talk after the wisest: He shall taste of my bottle: if he never drunk wine afore, it will go near to remove his fit: if I can recover him, and keep him tame, I will not take too much for him; he shall pay for him that hath him, and that soundly.

*Cal.* Thou dost me yet but little hurt; thou wilt anon, I know it by thy trembling: now *Prosper* works upon thee.

*Ste.* Come on your ways; open your mouth; here is that which will give language to you, cat; open your mouth: this will shake your shaking. I can tell you, and that soundly; you cannot tell who's your friend; open your chaps again.

*Trin.* I should know that voice: It should be,——But he is drown'd; and these are devils! O! defend me.——

*Ste.* Four legs, and two voices; a most delicate monster! His forward voice now is to speak well of his friend; his backward voice is to utter foul speeches, and to detract. If all the wine in my bottle will recover him, I will help his ague: Come—Amen: I will pour some in thy other mouth.

*Trin. Stephano,—*

*Ste.* Doth thy other mouth call me? Mercy! mercy! This is a devil, and no monster: I will leave him; I have no long spoon.

*Trin. Stephano!*—if thou be'st *Stephano*, touch me, and speak to me; for I am *Trinculo*;—be not afraid,—thy good friend *Trinculo*.

*Ste.* If thou be'st *Trinculo*, come forth; I'll pull thee by the lesser legs; if any be *Trinculo's* legs, these are they. Thou art very *Trinculo*, indeed: How cam'st thou to be the siege of this moon-calf? can he vent *Trinculos*?

*Trin.* I took him to be kill'd with a thunder-stroke:—But art thou not drown'd, *Stephano*? I hope now, thou art not drown'd? Is the storm overblown? I hid me under the dead moon-calf's gaberdine, for fear of the storm: And art thou living, *Stephano*? O *Stephano*, two Neapolitans 'scap'd!

*Ste.* Pr'ythee, do not turn me about; my stomach is not constant.

*Cal.* These be fine things, an if they be not sprights. That's a brave god, and bears celestial liquor: I will kneel to him.

*Ste.* How did'st thou 'scape? How cam'st thou hither? I swear, by this bottle, how thou cam'st hither. I escap'd upon a butt of sack, which the sailors heav'd over-board, by this bottle! which I made of the bark of a tree, with mine own hands, since I was cast ashore.

*Cal.* I'll swear, upon that bottle, to be thy true subject; for the liquor is not earthly.

*Ste.* Here; swear then, how escap'd'st thou?

*Trin.* Sworn ashore, man, like a duck; I can swim like a duck, I'll be sworn.

*Ste.* Here, kiss the book: Though thou can'st swim like a duck, thou art made like a goose.

*Trin.* O *Stephano*, hast any more of this?

*Ste.* The whole butt, man; my cellar is in a rock by the sea-side, where my wine is hid. How now, moon-calf? how does thine ague?



*Cal.* Haft thou not dropt from heaven?

*Ste.* Out o' the moon, I do assure thee: I was the man in the moon, when time was.

*Cal.* I have seen thee in her, and I do adore thee: my mistress shew'd me thee, and thy dog, and thy bush.

*Ste.* Come, swear to that; kiss the book: I will furnish it anon with new contents: swear.

*Trin.* By this good light this is a very shallow monster:—I afraid of him?—a very weak monster:—The man i' the moon!—a most poor credulous monster:—Well drawn, monster, in good sooth.

*Cal.* I'll shew thee every fertile inch o' the isle;  
And I will kiss thy foot: I pray thee, be my god.

*Trin.* By this light, a most perfidious and drunken monster; when his god's asleep, he'll rob his bottle.

*Cal.* I'll kiss thy foot; I'll swear myself thy subject.

*Ste.* Come on then; down, and swear.

*Trin.* I shall laugh myself to death at this puppy-headed monster: A most scurvy monster! I could find in my heart to beat him—

*Ste.* Come, kiss.

*Trin.*—But that the poor monster's in drink;  
An abominable monster!

*Cal.* I'll shew thee the best springs; I'll pluck thee berries;

I'll fish for thee, and get thee wood enough.

A plague upon the tyrant that I serve!

I'll bear him no more sticks, but follow thee,

Thou wond'rous man.

*Trin.* A most ridiculous monster; to make a wonder of a poor drunkard.

*Cal.* I pray thee, let me bring thee where crabs grow;

And I with my long nails will dig thee pig-nuts;

Shew thee a jay's nest, and instruct thee how

To snare the nimble marmazet; I'll bring thee

To clust'ring filberds, and sometimes I'll get thee

Young scamels from the rock: Wilt thou go with me?

*Ste.* I pray thee now, lead the way, without any more talking.—Trinculo, the king and all our company being drown'd, we will inherit here.—Here; bear my bottle! Follow Trinculo, we'll fill him by and by again.

Cal. [*Sings drunkenly.*] *Farewel master; farewel  
farewel.*

Trin. A howling monster; a drunken monster.

Cal. *No more dams I'll make for fish;  
Nor fetch in firing  
At requiring,  
Nor scrape trencher, nor wash dish;  
Ban' Ban', Ca—Caliban,  
Has a new master—Get a new man.*

Freedom, hey-day! hey-day, freedom! freedom, hey-day,  
freedom!

Ste. O brave monster! lead the way. [*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III. SCENE I.

*Before PROSPERO'S Cell. Enter FERDINAND, bearing  
a Log.*

*Ferdinand.*

**T**HERE be some sports are painful; but their labour  
Delight in them sets off: some kinds of baseness  
Are nobly undergone; and most poor matters  
Point to rich ends. This my mean task  
Would be as heavy to me, as odious; but  
The mistress which I serve quickens what's dead;  
And makes my labours pleasures: O, she is  
Ten times more gentle, than her father's crabbed;  
And he's compos'd of harshness. I must remove  
Some thousands of these logs, and pile them up,  
Upon a fore injunction; My sweet mistress  
Weeps when she sees me work; and says, such baseness  
Had ne'er like executor. I forget:  
But these sweet thoughts do even refresh my labours;  
Most busy-les, when I do it.

*Enter MIRANDA, and PROSPERO at a Distance.*

*Mira.* Alas, now ! pray you,  
Work not so hard : I would, the lightning had  
Burnt up those logs, that you are enjoin'd to pile !  
Pray, set it down, and rest you ; when this burns,  
'Twill weep for having weary'd you : My father  
Is hard at study ; pray now, rest yourself ;  
He's safe for these three hours.

*Fer.* O most dear mistress,  
The sun will set before I shall discharge  
What I must strive to do.

*Mira.* If you'll sit down,  
I'll bear your logs the while : Pray, give me that ;  
I'll carry't to the pile.

*Fer.* No, precious creature ;  
I had rather crack my sinews, break my back,  
Than you should such dishonour undergo,  
While I sit lazy by.

*Mira.* It would become me  
As well as it does you : and I should do it  
With much more ease ; for my good will is to it,  
And yours it is against.

*Pro.* Poor worm thou art infected ;  
This visitation shews it.

*Mira.* You look wearily.

*Fer.* No, noble mistress ; 'tis fresh morning with me,  
When you are by at night. I do beseech you  
(Chiefly that I might set it in my prayers),  
What is your name ?

*Mira.* Miranda :—O my father,  
I have broke your' heft to say so !

*Fer.* Admir'd Miranda !  
Indeed, the top of admiration ; worth  
What's dearest to the world ; Full many a lady  
I have ey'd with best regard ; and many a time  
The harmony of their tongues hath into bondage  
Brought my too diligent ear : for several virtues  
Have I lik'd several women ; never any  
With so full soul, but some defect in her  
Did quarrel with the noblest grace she ow'd,

And put it to the foil: But you, O you,  
So perfect, and so peerless, are created  
Of every creature's best.

*Mira.* I do not know  
One of my sex; no woman's face remember,  
Save, from my glass, mine own: nor have I seen  
More that I may call men, than you, good friend,  
And my dear father: how features are abroad,  
I am skilless of: but by my modesty,  
(The jewel in my dower), I would not wish  
Any companion in the world but you:  
Nor can imagination form a shape,  
Besides yourself, to like of: But I prattle  
Something too wildly, and my father's precepts  
I therein do forget.

*Fer.* I am, in my condition,  
A prince, Miranda; I do think, a king;  
(I would, not so!) and would no more endure  
This wooden slavery, than I would suffer  
The flesh-fly blow my mouth.—Hear my soul speak:—  
The very instant that I saw you, did  
My heart fly to your service; there resides,  
To make me slave to it; and, for your sake,  
Am I this patient log-man.

*Mira.* Do you love me?

*Fer.* O heaven, O earth, bear witness to this found,  
And crown what I profess with kind event,  
If I speak true; if hollowly, invert  
What best is boded me, to mischief! I,  
Beyond all limit of what else i' the world,  
Do love, prize, honour you.

*Mira.* I am a fool,  
To weep at what I am glad of.

*Pro.* Fair encounter  
Of two most rare affections! Heavens rain grace  
On that which breeds between them!

*Fer.* Wherefore weep you?

*Mira.* At mine unworthiness, that dare not offer  
What I desire to give; and much less take,  
What I shall die to want: But this is trifling;  
And all the more it seeks to hide itself,  
The bigger bulk it shows. Hence bashful cunning!

And prompt me, plain and holy innocence !  
 I am your wife, if you will marry me ;  
 If not, I'll die your maid : to be your fellow  
 You may deny me ; but I'll be your servant,  
 Whether you will or no.

*Fer.* My mistress, dearest,  
 And I thus humble ever.

*Mira.* My husband then ?

*Fer.* Ay, with a heart as willing  
 As bondage e'er of freedom : here's my hand.

*Mira.* And mine, with mine heart in't : and now fare-  
 wel,  
 Till half an hour hence.

*Fer.* A thousand, thousand !

[*Exeunt.*

*Pro.* So glad of this as they, I cannot be,  
 Who are surpriz'd with all ; but my rejoicing  
 At nothing can be more. I'll to my book ;  
 For yet, ere supper-time, must I perform  
 Much business appertaining.

[*Exit.*

## SCENE II.

*Another Part of the Island. Enter CALIBAN, STEPHANO,  
 and TRINCULO, with a Bottle.*

*Ste.* Tell not me ;—when the butt is out, we will drink  
 water ; not a drop before : therefore bear up, and board  
 e'm : Servant-monster, drink to me.

*Trin.* Servant-monster ? the folly of this island ! They  
 say, there's but five upon this isle : we are three of them ;  
 if the other two be brain'd like us, the state totters.

*Ste.* Drink, servant-monster, when I bid thee ; thy eyes  
 are almost set in thy head.

*Trin.* Where should they be set else ? he were a brave  
 monster indeed, if they were set in his tail.

*Ste.* My man-monster hath drown'd his tongue in sack :  
 for my part, the sea cannot drown me : I swam, e'er I  
 could recover the shore, five-and-thirty leagues, off and on,  
 by this light.—Thou shalt be my lieutenant, monster, or my  
 standard.

*Trin.* Your lieutenant, if you list ; he's no standard.

*Ste.* We'll not run, monsieur monster.

*Trin.* Nor go neither: but you'll lie, like dogs; and yet say nothing neither.

*Ste.* Moon-calf, speak once in thy life, if thou be'st a good moon-calf.

*Cal.* How does thy honour? Let me lick thy shoe: I'll not serve him, he is not valiant.

*Trin.* Thou ly'st, most ignorant monster; I am in case to juggle a constable: why, thou debosh'd fish thou, was there ever a man a coward, that hath drunk so much sack as I to day? Wilt thou tell a monstrous lie, being but half a fish, and half a monster?

*Cal.* Lo, how he mocks me; wilt thou let him, my lord?

*Trin.* Lord, quoth he!—that a monster should be such a natural!

*Cal.* Lo, lo, again; bite him to death, I pr'ythee.

*Ste.* *Trinculo*, keep a good tongue in your head; if you prove a mutineer, the next tree—The poor monster's my subject, and he shall not suffer indignity.

*Cal.* I thank my noble lord. Wilt thou be pleas'd to hearken once again to the suit I made to thee?

*Ste.* Marry will I: kneel, and repeat it; I will stand, and so shall *Trinculo*.

*Enter ARIEL, invisible.*

*Cal.* As I told thee before, I am subject to a tyrant; a forcerer, that by his cunning hath cheated me of the island.

*Ari.* Thou ly'st.

*Cal.* Thou ly'st, thou jesting monkey, thou; I would, my valiant master would destroy thee: I do not lie.

*Ste.* *Trinculo*, if you trouble him any more in his tale, by this hand, I will supplant some of your teeth.

*Trin.* Why, I said nothing.

*Ste.* Mum then, and no more—[*To Caliban*] Proceed,

*Cal.* I say, by forcery he got this isle;  
From me he got it. If thy greatness will  
Revenge it on him (for, I know, thou dar'st,  
But this thing dare not——)

*Ste.* That's more certain.

*Cal.* Thou shalt be lord of it, and I'll serve thee.

*Ste.* How now shall this be compass'd? Canst thou bring me to the party?

*Cal.* Yea, yea, my lord; I'll yield him thee asleep, Where thou may'st knock a nail into his head.

*Ari.* Thou ly'st, thou canst not.

*Cal.* What a py'd ninny's this? Thou scurvy patch!— I do beseech thy greatness, give him blows, And take his bottle from him: when that's gone, He shall drink nought but brine; for I'll not shew him Where the quick freshes are.

*Ste.* *Trinculo*, run into no further danger; interrupt the monster one word further, and, by this hand, I'll turn my mercy out of doors, and make a stock-fish of thee.

*Trin.* Why, what did I? I did nothing; I'll go further off.

*Ste.* Didst thou not say, he ly'd?

*Ari.* Thou ly'st.

*Ste.* Do I so? take thou that.

[*Beats him.*]

As you like this, give me the lie another time.

*Trin.* I did not give thee the lie:—Out o' your wits, and hearing too?—A pox of your bottle! this can sack and drinking do.—A murrain on your monster, and the devil take your fingers!

*Cal.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Ste.* Now, forward with your tale. Pr'ythee stand further off.

*Cal.* Beat him enough: after a little time, I'll beat him too.

*Ste.* Stand further.—Come, proceed.

*Cal.* Why, as I told thee, 'tis a custom with him I' the afternoon to sleep: there thou may'st brain him, Having first seiz'd his books; or with a log Batter his skull, or paunch him with a stake, Or cut his wezand with thy knife: Remember, First to possess his books: for without them He's but a sot, as I am; nor hath not One spirit to command: They all do hate him, As rootedly as I: Burn but his books; He hath brave utensils (for so he calls them) Which, when he has an house, he'll deck withal, And that most deeply to consider, is

The beauty of his daughter ; he himself  
 Calls her, a non-pareil : I never saw a woman.  
 But only *Sycorax* my dam, and she ;  
 But she as far surpasses *Sycorax*,  
 As greatest does least.

*Ste.* Is it so brave a lass ?

*Cal.* Ay, lord ; she will become thy bed, I warrant,  
 And bring thee forth brave brood.

*Ste.* Monster, I will kill this man : his daughter and I  
 will be king and queen (save our graces !) and *Trinculo*  
 and thyself shall be vice-roys :—Dost thou like the plot,  
*Trinculo* ?

*Trin.* Excellent.

*Ste.* Give me thy hand ; I am sorry I beat thee ; but,  
 while thou liv'st, keep a good tongue in thy head.

*Cal.* Within this half hour will he be asleep ;  
 Wilt thou destroy him then ?

*Ste.* Ay, on mine honour.

*Ari.* This will I tell my master.

*Cal.* Thou mak'st me merry : I am full of pleasure ;  
 Let us be jocund : Will you troul the catch,  
 You taught me but while-ere ?

*Ste.* At thy request, monster, I will do reason, any rea-  
 son : Come on, *Trinculo*, let us sing. [*Sings.*

*Flout 'em, and skout 'em, and skout 'em, and flout 'em ;*  
*Thought is free.*

*Cal.* That's not the tune. [*ARIEL plays the tune on a*

*Ste.* What is this fame ? [*tabor and pipe.*

*Trin.* This is the tune of our catch, play'd by the picture  
 of no-body.

*Ste.* If thou be'st a man, shew thyself in thy likeness : if  
 thou be'st a devil, take't as thou list.

*Trin.* O, forgive me my sins !

*Ste.* He that dies, pays all debts : I defy thee :—  
 Mercy upon us !

*Cal.* Art thou affeard ?

*Ste.* No, monster, not I.

*Cal.* Be not affeard ; the isle is full of noises,  
 Sounds, and sweet airs, that give delight, and hurt not.  
 Sometimes a thousand twangling instruments  
 Will hum about mine ears ; and sometimes voices,  
 That, if I then had wak'd after long sleep,



Will make me sleep again : and then, in dreaming,  
The clouds, methought would open, and shew riches  
Ready to drop upon me ; that when I wak'd,  
I cry'd to dream again.

*Ste.* This will prove a brave kingdom to me, where  
I shall have my music for nothing.

*Cal.* When *Prospero* is destroy'd.

*Ste.* That shall be by and by : I remember the story.

*Trin.* The sound is going away : let's follow it,  
And after do our work.

*Ste.* Lead, monster ; we'll follow.—I would I could see  
this taborer : he lays it on.

*Trin.* Wilt come? I'll follow, *Stephano*. [ *Exeunt.*

SCENE III.

*Changes to another part of the Island. Enter ALONSO,  
SEBASTIAN, ANTHONIO, GONZALO, ADRIAN,  
FRANCISCO, &c.*

*Gon.* By'r lakin, I can go no further, Sir ;  
My old bones ache : here's a maze trod, indeed  
Through forth-rights, and meanders ! by your patience  
I needs must rest me.

*Alon.* Old lord, I cannot blame thee,  
Who am myself attach'd with weariness,  
To the dulling of my spirits : sit down and rest.  
Even here I put off my hope, and keep it  
No longer for my flatterer : he is drown'd,  
Whom thus we stray to find ; and the sea mocks  
Our frustrate search on land : Well let him go.

*Ant.* [ *Aside to Sebastian.* ] I am right glad that he's so out  
of hope.

Do not, for one repulse, forego the purpose  
That you resolv'd to effect.

*Seb.* The next advantage  
Will we take thoroughly.

*Ant.* Let it be to-night ;  
For, now they are oppress'd with travel, they  
Will not, nor cannot, use such vigilance,  
As when they are fresh.

*Seb.* I say, to-night : no more.

*Solemn and strange Music; and Prospero on the Top, invisible. Enter several strange Shapes, bringing in a Banquet; they dance about it with gentle Actions of Salutation; and, inviting the King, &c. to eat, they depart.*

*Alon.* What harmony is this? my good friends bark!

*Gon.* Marvellous sweet music!

*Alon.* Give us kind keepers, heavens! What were these?

*Seb.* A living drollery: Now I will believe,  
That there are unicorns; that, in Arabia  
There is one tree, the phoenix' throne; one phoenix  
At this hour reigneth there.

*Ant.* I'll believe both;  
And what does else want credit, come to me,  
And I'll be sworn 'tis true: Travellers ne'er did lie,  
Though fools at home condemn 'em.

*Gon.* If in Naples  
I should report this now, would they believe me?  
If I should say I saw such islanders,  
(For, certes, these are people of the island)  
Who though they are of monstrous shape, yet, note,  
Their manners are more gentle, kind, than of  
Our human generation you shall find  
Many, nay, almost any.

*Pro.* Honest lord.  
Thou hast said well; for some of you there present  
Are worse than devils.

*Alon.* I cannot too much muse,  
Such shapes, such gesture, and such sound, expressing  
(Although they want the use of tongue) a kind  
Of excellent dumb discourse.

*Pro.* Praise in departing. [*Aside.*

*Fran.* They vanish'd strangely.

*Seb.* No matter, since  
They have left their vjands behind; for we have stomachs.  
Will't please you taste of what is here?

*Alon.* Not I.

*Gon.* Faith, Sir, you need not fear: When we were  
boys.  
Who would believe that there were mountaineers,

Dew-lap'd like bulls, whose throats had hanging at 'em  
 Wallets of flesh; or that there were such men,  
 Whose heads stood in their breasts; which now we find,  
 Each putter out on five for one, will bring us  
 Good warrant of.

*Alon.* I will stand to, and feed,  
 Although my last; no matter, since I feel  
 The best is past:—Brother, my lord the duke,  
 Stand to, and do as we.

*Thunder and Lightning. Enter ARIEL like a Harpy; claps his Wings upon the Table, and, with a quaint Device, the Banquet vanishes.*

*Ari.* You are three men of sin, whom destiny,  
 (That hath to instrument this lower world,  
 And what is in't) the never-furfeited sea  
 Hath caused to belch up; and on this island  
 Where man doth not inhabit; you mongst men  
 Being must unfit to live. I have made you mad;  
 And even with such like valour men hang and drown  
 Their poor selves. [*ALONSO, SEBASTIAN, and the rest*  
*Ye fools! I and my fellows [draws their swords,*  
 Are ministers of fate; the elements  
 Of whom your swords are tempered, may as well  
 Wound the loud winds, or with bemockt-at stabs  
 Kill the still-cloting waters, as diminish  
 One dowle that's in my plume; my fellow ministers  
 Are like invulnerable: if you could hurt,  
 Your swords are now two maffy for your strengths,  
 And will not be up-lifted: But remember,  
 (For that's my business to you) that you three  
 From Milan did supplant good *Prospero*;  
 Expos'd unto the sea, which hath requit it,  
 Him, and his innocent child: for which foul deed  
 The powers, delaying, not forgetting, have  
 Incens'd the seas and shores, yea, all the creatures,  
 Against your peace; Thee, of thy son *Alonso*,  
 They have bereft; and do pronounce by me,  
 Ling'ring perdition (worte than any death  
 Can be at once) shall step by step attend

You, and your ways; whose wraths to guard you from  
(Which here, in this most desolate isle, else falls  
Upon your heads) is nothing, but heart's sorrow,  
And a clear life ensuing.

*He vanishes in Thunder: then to soft Music, enter the shapes  
again, and dance with Mops and Mowes, and carry out  
the Table.*

*Pro.* [*Aside.*] Bravely the figure of this harpy hast thou  
Perform'd, my *Ariel*: a grace it had, devouring:  
Of my instruction hast thou nothing 'bated,  
In what thou had'st to say: so, with good life,  
And observation strange, my meaner ministers  
Their several kinds have done: my high charms work,  
And these mine enemies, are all knit up  
In their distractions: they now are in my power;  
And in these fits I leave them, whilst I visit  
Young *Ferdinand* (whom they suppose is drown'd),  
And his and my lov'd darling. [*Exit PRO. from above.*

*Gon.* I' the name of something holy, Sir, why stand you  
In this strange stare?

*Alon.* O, it is monstrous! monstrous!  
Methought, the billows spoke, and told me of it;  
The winds did sing it to me; and the thunder,  
That deep and dreadful organ-pipe, pronounc'd  
The name of *Prosper*; it did bask my trespass.  
Therefore my son i'the ooze is bedded; and  
I'll seek him deeper than e'er plummet founded,  
And with him there lie mudded.

*Seb.* But one fiend at a time,  
I'll fight their legions o'er.

*Ant.* I'll be thy second. [*Exeunt.*

*Gon.* All three of them are desperate; their great guilt,  
Like poison given to work a great time after,  
Now 'gins to bite the spirits:—I do beseech you  
That are of suppler joints, follow them swiftly,  
And hinder them from what this ecstasy  
May now provoke them to.

*Adri* Follow, I pray you.

[*Exeunt.*

## ACT IV.—SCENE I.

PROSPERO'S Cell. *Enter PROSPERO, FERDINAND, and MIRANDA.*

*Prospero.*

**I**F I have too austere punis'd you,  
Your compensation makes amends; for I  
Have given you here a third of mine own life,  
Or that for which I live; whom once again  
I tender to thy hand; all thy vexations  
Were but my trials of thy love, and thou  
Hast strangely stood the test; here, afore Heaven,  
I ratify this my rich gift. O *Ferdinand*,  
Do not smile at me, that I boast her off,  
For thou shalt find she will outstrip all praise,  
And make it halt behind her.

*Fer.* I do believe it,  
Against an oracle.

*Pro.* Then, as my gift, and thine own acquisition  
Worthily purchas'd, take my daughter: But  
If thou dost break her virgin knot, before  
All sanctimonious ceremonies may  
With full and holy rite be minister'd,  
No sweet aspersion shall the Heavens let fall  
To make this contract grow; but barren hate,  
Sour-ey'd disdain, and discord, shall bestrew  
The union of your bed with weeds so loathly,  
That you shall hate it both: therefore take heed,  
As Hymen's lamps shall light you.

*Fer.* As I hope  
For quiet days, fair issue, and long life,  
With such love as 'tis now; the murkiest den,  
The most opportune place, the strong'st suggestion  
Our worser Genius can, shall never melt  
Mine honour into lust, to take away  
The edge of that day's celebration,  
When I shall think, or Phœbus' steeds are founde'd,  
Or night keep chain'd below.

*Pro.* Fairly spoke :  
Sit then, and talk with her, she is mine own.—  
What, *Ariel*; my industrious servant *Ariel*!

*Enter ARIEL.*

*Ari.* What would my potent master? here I am.

*Pro.* Thy and thy meaner fellows, your last service  
Did worthily perform; and I must use you  
In such another trick; go, bring the rabble,  
O'er whom I give thee power, here, to this place:  
Incite them to quick motion; for I must  
Bestow upon the eyes of this young couple  
Some vanity of mine art: it is my promise,  
And they expect it from me.

*Ari.* Presently?

*Pro.* Ay, with a twink.

*Ari.* Before you can say, *Come*, and *go*.  
And breath twice; and cry, *so, so*;  
Each one, tripping on his toe,  
Will be here with mop and moe;  
Do you love me, master? no.

*Pro.* Dearly, my delicate *Ariel*: Do not approach,  
Till thou dost hear me call.

*Ari.* Well, I conceive.

[*Exit.*

*Pro.* Look, thou be true; do not give dalliance  
Too much the rein; the strongest oaths are straw  
To the fire i' the blood: be more abstemious,  
Or else, good night your vow!

*Fer.* I warrant you, Sir;  
The white, cold, virgin-snow upon my heart  
Abates the ardour of my liver.

*Pro.* Well—

Now come, my *Ariel*; bring a corallary,  
Rather than want a spirit; appear, and perty.—  
No tongue; all eyes; be silent

[*Soft music.*

*A Masque. Enter IRIS.*

*Iris.* Ceres, most bounteous lady, thy rich leas  
Of wheat, rye, barley, vatches, oats, and pease;  
Thy turfy mountains, where live nibbling sheep,  
And flat meads thatch'd with flower, them to keep;

Thy banks with pionied and twilled brims,  
 Which spongy April at thy heft betrimms,  
 To make cold nymphs chaste crowns; and thy broom  
     groves,  
 Whose shadow the disinis'd bachelor loves,  
 Being lasf-lorn; thy pole-clipt vineyard;  
 And thy sea-marge, steril, and rocky-hard,  
 Where thou thyself do'st air; The queen o' the sky,  
 Whose watery arch, and messenger, am I,  
 Bids thee leave these; and with her sovereign grace,  
 Here on this grafs-plot, in this very place,  
 To come and sport: her peacocks fly amain;  
 Approach, rich *Ceres*, her to entertain.

*Enter CERES.*

*Cer.* Hail, many-coloured messenger, that ne'er  
 Dost disobey the wife of Jupiter;  
 Who, with thy saffron wings, upon my flowers;  
 Diffusest honey drops, refreshing showers;  
 And with each end of thy blew bow dost crown  
 My bosky acres, and my unshrubb'd down,  
 Rich scarf to my proud earth; Why hath thy queen  
 Summon'd me hither, to this short-grafs'd green?

*Iris.* A contract of true love to celebrate;  
 And some donation freely to estate  
 On the blest'd lovers.

*Cer.* Tell me, heavenly bow,  
 If Venus, or her son, as thou dos't know,  
 Do now attend the queen? since they did plot  
 The means, that dusky Dis my daughter got,  
 Her and her blind boy's scandal'd company  
 I have foresworn.

*Iris.* Of her society  
 Be not afraid: I met her deity  
 Cutting the Clouds towards Paphos; and her son  
 Dove-drawn with her: here thought they to have done  
 Some wanton charm upon this man and maid,  
 Whose vows are, that no bed-rite shall be paid  
 Till *Hymen's* torch be lighted: but in vain;  
*Mars's* hot minion is return'd again;  
 Her waspish-headed son has broke his arrows,  
 Swears he will shoot no more, but play with sparrows,  
 And be a boy right out.

*Cer.* High queen of state,  
Great *Juno* comes; I know her by her gait.

*Enter JUNO.*

*Jun.* How does my bounteous sister? Go with me,  
To bless this twain, that they may prosperous be,  
And honour'd in their issue.

*Jun.* Honour, riches, marriage-blessing,  
Long continuance, and increasing.  
Hourly joys be still upon you!  
*Juno sings her blessings on you.*

*Cer.* Earth's increase, and foison plenty;  
Barns, and garners, never empty;  
Vines, with clust'ring bunches growing;  
Plants, with goodly burden bowing;  
Spring come to you, at the farthest,  
In the very end of harvest!  
Scarcity, and want, shall shun you;  
Ceres' blessing so is on you.

*Fer.* This is a most majestic vision, and  
Harmonious charmingly: May I be bold  
To think these spirits?

*Pro.* Spirits, which by mine art  
I have from their confines call'd to enact  
My present fancies.

*Fer.* Let me live here ever;  
So rare a wonder'd father, and a wife  
Make this place paradise.

*Pro.* Sweet no, silence:  
*Juno* and *Ceres*, whisper seriously;  
There's something else to do: hush, and be mute,  
Or else our spell is marr'd.

[*JUNO* and *CERES* whisper, and send *IRIS* on Em-  
ployment.]

*Iris.* You nymphs, call'd *Naiads*, of the wand'ring  
brooks,  
With your sedg'd crowns, and ever harmless looks,  
Leave your crisp channels, and on this green land  
Answer your summons; *Juno* does command:  
Come temperate nymphs, and help to celebrate  
A contract of true love; be not too late.



*Enter certain Reapers, properly habited: they join with the Nymphs in a graceful Dance; towards the end whereof Prospero starts suddenly, and speaks; after which, to a strange, hollow, and confused Noise, they vanish heavily.*

*Pro.* [*aside.*] I had forgot that foul conspiracy  
Of the beast *Caliban*, and his confederates,  
Against my life; the minute of their plot  
Is almost come.—[*To the spirits.*] Well done;—  
avoid;—no more.

*Fer.* This is strange: your father's in some passion  
That works him strongly.

*Mira.* Never till this day,  
Saw I him touch'd with anger so distemper'd.

*Pro.* You do look, my son, in a mov'd fort,  
As if you were dismay'd: be cheerful, 'sir:  
Our revels now are ended; these our actors,  
As I foretold you, were all spirits, and  
Are melted into air, into thin air:  
And, like the baseless fabrick of this vision,  
The cloud-capt towers, the gorgeous palaces,  
The solemn temples, the great globe itself,  
Yea, all which it inherit, shall dissolve;  
And, like this insubstantial pageant faded,  
Leave not a rack behind: We are such stuff  
As dreams are made on, and our little life  
Is rounded with a sleep.—Sir, I am vex'd;  
Bear with my weakness; my old brain is troubled:  
Be not disturb'd with my infirmity:  
If thou be pleas'd, retire into my cell,  
And there repose; a turn or two I'll walk,  
To still my beating mind.

*Fer. Mira.* We wish you peace.

[*Exeunt. FER. and MIRA.*]

*Pro.* Come with a thought:—I thank thee:—*Ariel*, come.

*PROSPERO comes forward from the cell;*

*Enter ARIEL to him.*

*Ari.* Thy thoughts I cleave to: What's thy pleasure

*Pro.* Spirit,  
We must prepare, to meet with *Caliban*.

*Ari.* Ay, my commander: when I presented *Ceres*,  
I thought to have told thee of it; but I fear'd,  
Lest I might anger thee.

*Pro.* Say again, where didst thou leave these varlets?

*Ari.* I told you, sir they were red hot with drinking;  
So full of valour, that they smote the air  
For breathing in their faces; beat the ground  
For kissing of their feet; yet always bending  
Towards their project: Then I beat my tabor,  
At which, like unback'd colts, they prick'd their ears,  
Advanc'd their eye-lids, lifted up their noses,  
As they smelt musick; so I charm'd their ears,  
That, calf-like, they my lowing follow'd, through  
Tooth'd briers, sharp furzes, pricking goss, and thorns,  
Which enter'd their frail thins: at last I left them  
I' the filthy mantled pool beyond your cell,  
There dancing up to the chins, that the foul lake  
O'er-stunk their feet.

*Pro.* This was well done, my bird:  
Thy shape invisible retain thou still:  
The trumpery in my house, go, bring it hither,  
For stale to catch these thieves.

*Ari.* I go, I go.

[*Exit.*

*Pro.* A devil, a born devil, on whose nature  
Nature can never stick; on whom my pains,  
Humanely taken, all, all lost, quite lost;  
And as, with age, his body uglier grows,  
So his mind cankers: I will plague them all,  
Even to roaring:—Come, hang them on this line.

[*PROSPERO remains invisible.*

*Enter ARIEL loaded with glistening Apparel, &c.*

*Enter CALIBAN, STEPHANO, and TRINCULO,  
all wet.*

*Cal.* Pray you, tread softly, that the blind mole may not  
hear a foot fall: we now are near his cell.

*Ste.* Monster, your fairy, which, you say, is a harm-  
less fairy, has done little better than play'd the Jack  
with us.

*Trin.* Monster, I do smell all horse-piss; at which my nose is in great indignation.

*Ste.* So is mine. Do you hear, monster? If I should take a displeasure against you; look you—

*Trin.* Thou wert but a lost monster.

*Cal.* Good my lord, give me thy favour still:

Be patient, for the prize I'll bring thee to  
Shall hood-wink this mischance: therefore, speak softly;  
All's hush as midnight yet.

*Trin.* Ay, but to lose our bottles in the pool,—

*Ste.* There is not only disgrace and dishonour in that monster, but an infinite loss.

*Trin.* That's more to me than my wetting: Yet this is your harmless fairy, monster.

*Ste.* I will fetch off my bottle, though I be o'er ears for my labour.

*Cal.* Pr'thee, my king, be quiet; see'st thou here,  
This is the mouth o' the cell; no noise, and enter:  
Do that good mischief, which may make this island  
Thine own for ever, and I, thy *Caliban*,  
For aye thy foot-licker.

*Ste.* Give me thy hand: I do begin to have bloody thoughts

*Trin.* O king Stephano! O peer! O worthy *Stephano* .  
Look, what a wardrobe here is for thee!

*Cal.* Let it alone, thou fool; it is but trash.

*Trin.* Oh, ho, monster: we know what belongs to a frippery:—O, king *Stephano*!

*Ste.* Put off that gown, *Trinculo*; by this hand,  
I'll have that gown.

*Trin.* Thy grace shall have it.

*Cal.* The dropsy down this fool! what do you mean,  
To doat thus on such luggage? Let's along,  
And do the murder first: if he awake,  
From toe to crown he'll fill our skin with pinches;  
Make us strange stuff.

*Ste.* Be you quiet, monster.—Mistress line, is not this my jerkin? Now is the jerkin under the line: Now, jerkin, you are like to lose your hair, and prove a bald jerkin.

*Trin.* Do, do: we steal by line and level, and't like your grace.

*Ste.* I thank thee for that jest; here's a garment for't; wit shall not go unrewarded, while I am king of this country: *Steal by line and level*, is an excellent pass of pate: there's another garment for't.

*Trin.* Monster, come, put some lime upon your fingers, and away with the rest.

*Cal.* I will have none on't: we shall lose our time,  
And all be turn'd to barnacles, or to apes  
With foreheads villainous low.

*Ste.* Monster, lay to your fingers; help to bear this away. where my hog'shead of wine is, or I'll turn you out of my kingdom: go to, carry this.

*Trin.* And this.

*Ste.* Ay, and this.

*A Noise of Hunters heard. Enter divers Spirits in shape of Hounds, hunting them about; PROSPERO and ARIEL setting them on.*

*Pro.* Hey, Mountain, hey!

*Ari.* Silver! there it goes, Silver!

*Pro.* Fury, Fury! there Tyrant, there! hark, hark —  
[to Ariel.] Go, charge my goblins that they grind their joints

With dry convulsions; shorten up their sinews  
With aged cramps; and more pinch-spotted make them,  
Than pard, or cat o'mountain.

*Ari.* Hark, they roar.

*Pro.* Let them be hunted soundly: At this hour  
Lie at my mercy all mine enemies;  
Shortly shall all my labours end, and thou  
Shalt have the air at freedom: for a little,  
Fellow, and do me service.

[*Exeunt.*]

ACT

## ACT V. SCENE I.

*Before the cell. Enter PROSPERO in his magic Robes and ARIEL.*

*Prospera.*

**N**OW does my project gather to a head.  
My charms crack not; my spirits obey; and time  
Goes upright with his carriage. How's the day?  
*Ari.* On the sixth hour; at which time, my lord,  
You said our work should cease.

*Pro.* I did say so,  
When first I rais'd the tempest. Say, my spirit,  
How fares the king and his followers?

*Ari.* Confin'd together  
In the same fashion as you gave in charge;  
Just as you left them; all prisoners, sir,  
In the lime-grove which weather-fends your cell;  
They cannot budge, till your release. The king,  
His brother, and yours, abide all three distracted:  
And the remainder mourning over them,  
Brim-full of sorrow, and dismay; but, chiefly,  
Him that you term'd *The good old lord, Gonzalo*,  
His tears run down his beard, like winter drops  
From eaves of reeds: your charm so strongly works  
That if you now beheld them, your affections  
Would become tender.

*Pro.* Do'st thou think so, spirit?

*Ari.* Mine would, sir, were I human.

*Pro.* And mine shall.

Hast thou, which art but air, a touch, a feeling  
Of their afflictions? and shall not myself,  
One of their kind, that relish all as sharply,  
Passion as they, be kindlier mov'd than thou art?  
Though with their high wrongs I am struck to the quick,  
Yet, with my nobler reason, 'gainst my fury

Do I take part ; the rarer action  
 In virtue than in vengeance : they being penitent,  
 The sole drift of my purpose doth extend  
 Not a frown further : Go, release them, Ariel ;  
 My charms I'll break, their senses I'll restore,  
 And they shall be themselves.

*Ari.* I'll fetch them, sir.

[*Exit.*

*Pro.* Ye elves of hills, brooks, standing lakes and groves ;  
 And ye, that on the sands with printless foot  
 Do chase the ebbing Neptune, and do fly him,  
 When he comes back ; you demy-puppets, that  
 By moon-shine do the green sour ringlets make,  
 Whereof the ewe not bites ; and you, whose pastime  
 Is to make midnight mushrooms ; that rejoice  
 To hear the solemn curfew ; by whose aid  
 (Weak masters through ye be) I have be-dimm'd  
 The noon-tide sun, call'd forth the mutinous winds,  
 And 'twixt the green sea and the azur'd vault  
 Set roaring war : to the dread rattling thunder  
 Have I given fire, and rifted Jove's stout oak  
 With his own bolt ; the strong-bas'd promontory  
 Have I made shake : and by the spurs pluck'd up  
 The pine, and cedar : graves, at my command,  
 Have wak'd their sleepers ; op'd, and let them forth  
 By my so potent art : But this rough magic  
 I here abjure ; and, when I have requir'd  
 Some heavenly music (which even now I do),  
 To work mine end upon their senses, that  
 This airy charm is for, I'll break my staff,  
 Bury it certain fathoms in the earth,  
 And, deeper than did ever plummet sound,  
 I'll drown my book.

[*Solemn music.*

*Re-enter ARIEL: after him ALONSO with a frantic gesture, attended by GONZALO. SEBASTIAN and FRANCISCO. They all enter the Circle which PROSPERO had made, and there stand charm'd; which PROSPERO observing, speaks.*

A solemn air, and the best comforter  
To an unsettled fancy, cure thy brains,  
Now useless, boil'd within thy skull! there stand,  
For you are spell-stopp'd.—  
Holy *Gonzalo*, honourable man,  
Mine eyes, even sociable to the shew of thine,  
Fall fellowly drops.—The charm dissolves apace;  
And as the morning steals upon the night,  
Melting the darkness, so their rising senses  
Begin to chase the ignorant fumes that mantle  
Their clearer reason.—O good *Gonzalo*,  
My true preserver, and a loyal sir  
To him thou follow'st; I will pay thy graces  
Home, both in word and deed.—Most cruelly  
Didst thou, *Alonso*, use me and my daughter:  
Thy brother was a furtherer in the act;—  
Thou'rt pinch'd for't now, *Sebastian*.—Flesh and blood,  
You brother mine, that entertain'd ambition,  
Expel'd remorse, and nature; who, with *Sebastian*,  
(Whose inward pinches therefore are most strong),  
Would here have kill'd your king; I do forgive thee,  
Unnatural though thou art!—Their understanding  
Begins to swell; and the approaching tide  
Will shortly fill the reasonable shore,  
That now lies foul and muddy. Not one of them,  
That yet looks on me, or would know me:—*Ariel*,  
Fetch me the hat and rapier in my cell;—  
I will dis-case me, and myself present, [Exit ARIEL.  
As I was sometime *Milan*; quickly, spirit;  
Thou shalt e'er long be free.

*ARIEL enters singing, and helps to attire him.*

*Where the bee sucks, there suck I;  
In a cowslip's bell I lie:*

*There I couch when owls do cry.  
On the bat's back I do fly,  
After summer, merrily:  
Merrily, merrily, shall I live now,  
Under the blossom that hangs on the bough.*

*Pro.* Why, that's my dainty *Ariel*: I shall miss thee;  
But yet thou shalt have freedom: So, so, so——  
To the king's ship, invisible as thou art:  
There shalt thou find the mariners asleep  
Under the hatches; the master and boatswain,  
Being awake, enforce them to this place;  
And presently, I pr'ythee.

*Ari.* I drink the air before me, and return  
Or e'er your pulse twice beat. [Exit.]

*Gon.* All torment, trouble, wonder, and amazement  
Inhabit here: Some heavenly power guide us  
Out of this fearful country!

*Pro.* Behold, sir, King,  
The wronged duke of Milan, *Prospero*:  
For more assurance that a living prince  
Does now speak to thee, I embrace thy body;  
And to thee, and thy company, I bid  
A hearty welcome.

*Alon.* Whe'r thou be'st he, or no,  
Or some enchanted trifle to abuse me,  
As late I have been, I not know: thy pulse  
Beats, as of flesh and blood; and, since I saw thee,  
The affliction of my mind amends, with which,  
I fear a madness held me; this must crave  
(An if this be at all) a most strange story.  
Thy dukedom I relinq; and do intreat,  
Thou pardon me my wrongs;—But how should *Prospero*  
Be living and be here?

*Pro.* First, noble friend,  
Let me embrace thine age; worse honour cannot  
Be measur'd, or confin'd.

*Gon.* Whether this be,  
Or be not, I'll not swear.

*Pro.* You do yet taste



Some subtilties o' the isle, that will not let you  
Believe things certain :—Welcome, my friends all :—  
But you, my brace of lords, were I so minded,

[*Aside to SEB. and ANT.*

I here could pluck his highness' frown upon you,  
And justify you traitors ; at this time  
I'll tell no tales.

*Seb.* The devil speaks in him.

[*Aside.*

*Pro.* No :—

For you, most wicked fir, whom to call brother  
Would even infect my mouth, I do forgive  
Thy rankest fault ; all of them ; and require  
My dukedom of thee, which, perforce, I know,  
Thou must restore.

*Alon.* If thou be'st *Prospero*,  
Give us particulars of thy preservation :  
How thou hast met us here, who, three hours since,  
Were wreck'd upon this shore ; where I have lost,  
How sharp the point of this remembrance is !  
My dear son *Ferdinand*.

*Pro.* I am woe for't, Sir.

*Alon.* Irreparable is the loss ; and patience  
Says, it is past her cure.

*Pro.* I rather think,  
You have not fought her help ; of whose soft grace  
For the like loss I have her sovereign aid,  
And rest myself content.

*Alon.* You the like loss ?

*Pro.* As great to me as late ; and, supportable  
To make the dear loss, have I means much weaker  
Than you may call to comfort you ; for I  
Have lost my daughter.

*Alon.* A daughter ?

O heavens ! that they were living both in Naples,  
The king and queen there ! that they were, I wish  
Myself were mudded in that oozy bed,  
Where my son lies. When did you loose your daughter ?

*Pro.* In the last tempest. I perceive, these lords  
At this encounter do so much admire,  
That they devour their reason ; and scarce think,  
Their eyes do offices of truth, their words  
Are natural breath ; but howsoe'er you have

Been julted from your senses, know for certain,  
 That I am *Prospero*, and that very duke  
 Which was thrust forth of Milan; who most strangely  
 Upon this shore, where you were wreck'd, was landed  
 To be the lord on't. No more yet of this;  
 For 'tis a chronicle of day by day,  
 Not a relation for a breakfast, nor  
 Befitting this first meeting. Welcome, Sir;  
 This cell's my court: here have I few attendants,  
 And subjects none abroad: pray you, look in;  
 My dukedom since you have given me again,  
 I will requite with as good a thing;  
 At least, bring forth a wonder, to content ye,  
 As much as me my dukedom.

*The Entrance of the Cell opens, and discovers FERDINAND  
 and MIRANDA playing at Chefs.*

*Mira.* Sweet lord, you play me false.

*Fer.* No, my dearest love,  
 I would not for the world.

*Mira.* Yes, for a score of kingdoms, you should  
 wrangle,  
 And I would call it fair play.

*Alon.* If this prove  
 A vition of this island, one dear son  
 Shall I twice lose.

*Seb.* A most high miracle!

*Fer.* Though the seas threaten, they are merciful;  
 I have curs'd them without cause.

*Alon.* Now all the blessings [FERDINAND kneels.  
 Of a glad father compass thee about!  
 Arise, and say how thou cam'st here?

*Mira.* O! wonder!  
 How many goodly creatures are there here!  
 How beauteous mankind is! O brave new world,  
 That has such people in't!

*Pro.* 'Tis new to thee.

*Alon.* What is this maid, with whom thou wast at play?  
 Your eld'st acquaintance cannot be three hours;  
 Is she the goddess that hath sever'd us  
 And brought us thus together?

*Fer.* Sir, she's mortal;  
 But, by immortal Providence, she's mine:  
 I chose her, when I could not ask my father  
 For his advice; nor thought, I had one; she  
 Is daughter to this famous duke of Milan,  
 Of whom so often I have heard renown,  
 But never saw before; of whom I have  
 Receiv'd a second life, and second father  
 This lady makes him to me.

*Alon.* I am hers:  
 But, oh, how oddly will it sound, that I  
 Must ask my child forgiveness!

*Pro.* There, Sir, stop;  
 Let us not burden our remembrance with  
 An heaviness that's gone.

*Gon.* I have inly wept,  
 Or should have spoke ere this. Look down, you gods,  
 And on this couple drop a blessed crown;  
 For it is you, that have chalked forth the way  
 Which brought us hither!

*Alon.* I say, Amen, Gonzalo!

*Gon.* Was Milan thrust from Milan, that his issue  
 Should become kings of Naples? O, rejoice  
 Beyond a common joy; and set it down  
 With gold on lasting pillars: In one voyage  
 Did *Claribel* her husband find at Tunis;  
 And *Ferdinand*, her brother, found a wife,  
 Where he himself was lost; *Prospero* his dukedom,  
 In a poor isle; and all of us, ourselves,  
 When no man was his own.

*Alon.* Give me your hand:  
 Let grief and sorrow still embrace his heart,  
 That doth not with you joy!

*Gon.* Be't so, Amen!

*Re-enter ARIEL, with the Master and Boatswain amazedly following.*

O look, Sir, look, Sir, here are more of us!  
 I prophesy'd, if a gallows were on land,  
 This fellow could not drown:—Now, blasphemy,  
 That swear'st grace o'erboard, not an oath on shore!

Hast thou no mouth by land? What is the news?

*Boats.* The best news is, that we have safely found  
Our king, and company: the next, our ship,—  
Which but three glasses since, we gave out split,—  
Is tight, and yare, and bravely rigg'd, as when  
We first put out to sea.

*Ari.* Sir, all this service  
Have I done since I went.

*Pro.* My tricksy spirit!

*Alon.* These are not natural events; they strengthen,  
From strange to stranger:—Say, how came you hither?

*Boats.* If I did think, Sir, if I were well awake,  
I'd strive to tell you. We were dead asleep,  
And (how, we know not) all clapp'd under hatches,  
Where, but even now, with strange and several noises  
Of roaring, shrieking, howling, gingling chains,  
And more diversity of sounds, all horrible,  
We were awak'd; straightway, at liberty:  
Where we, in all her trim, freshly beheld  
Our royal, good, and gallant ship; our master  
Cap'ring to eye her: On a trice, so please you,  
Even in a dream, where we divided from them,  
And were brought moping hither.

*Ari.* Was't well done?

*Pro.* Bravely, my diligence. Thou shalt be } [Aside.  
free.

*Alon.* This is as strange a maze as e'er men trod;  
And there is in this business more than nature  
Was ever conduct of: some oracle  
Must rectify our knowledge.

*Pro.* Sir, my liege,  
Do not infest your mind with beating on  
The strangeness of this business; at pick'd leisure,  
(Which shall be shortly, single I'll resolve you,  
To which you shall seem probable) of every  
These happened accidents: till when, be cheerful,  
And think of each thing well. Come hither, }

spirit;  
Set *Caliban* and his companions free:

[To ARIEL.]  
Untie the spell. How fares my gracious Sir?

[Aside.]

There are yet missing of your company  
Some few odd lads, that you remember not.

*Re-enter ARIEL, driving in CALIBAN, STEPHANO, and  
TRINCULO, in their stolen Apparel.*

*Ste.* Every man shift for all the rest, and let no man take care for himself; for all is but fortune:—Coragio, bully monster, Coragio!

*Trin.* If these be true spies which I wear in my head, here's a goodly sight.

*Cal.* O *Setebos*, these be brave spirits, indeed!  
How fine my master is! I am afraid  
He will chastise me.

*Seb.* Ha, ha;  
What things are these, my lord *Antonio*!  
Will money buy them?

*Ant.* Very like; one of them  
Is a plain fish, and, no doubt, marketable.

*Pro.* Mark but the badges of these men, my lords,  
Then say, if they be true:—This mis-shapen knave,—  
His mother was a witch; and one so strong  
That could controul the moon, make flows and ebbs,  
And deal in her command without her power:  
These three have robb'd me; and this demi-devil  
(For he's a bastard one) had plotted with them  
To make my life: two of these fellows, you  
Must know and own: this thing of darkness, I  
Acknowledge mine.

*Cal.* I shall be pinch'd to death.

*Alon.* Is not this *Stephano*, my drunken butler?

*Seb.* He's drunk now: where had he wine?

*Alon.* And *Trinculo* is reeling ripe: where should they  
Find this grand liquor that hath gilded them?—  
How cam'st thou in this pickle?

*Trin.* I have been in such a pickle since I saw you last,  
that I fear me, will never out of my bones: I shall not fear  
fly-blowing.

*Seb.* Why, how now, *Stephano*?

*Ste.* O, touch me not; I am not *Stephano*, but a cramp.

*Pro.* You'd be king of the isle, firrah!

*Ste.* I should have been a fore one then.

*Alon.* This is a strange thing as e'er I look on.

[*Pointing to* CALIBAN.

*Pro.* He is as disproportion'd in his manners,  
As in his shape:—Go, firrah, to my cell:  
Take with you your companions; as you look  
To have my pardon, trim it handsomely.

*Cal.* Ay, that I will; and I'll be wife hereafter,  
And seek for grace: What a thrice double ass  
Was I, to take this drunkard for a god,  
And worship this dull fool?

*Pro.* Go to; away!

*Alon.* Hence, and bestow your luggage where you found it,

*Seb.* Or stole it, rather.

*Pro.* Sir, I invite your highness, and your train,  
To my poor cell: where you shall take your rest  
For this one night; which (part of it) I'll waste  
With such discourse, as, I not doubt, shall make it  
Go quick away: the story of my life,  
And the particular accidents gone by,  
Since I came to this isle: And in the morn,  
I'll bring you to your ship, and so to Naples,  
Where I have hope to see the nuptials  
Of these our dear beloved solemniz'd;  
And thence retire me to my Milan, where  
Every third thought shall be my grave.

*Alon.* I long

To hear the story of your life, which must  
Take the ear strangely,

*Pro.* I'll deliver all;

And promise you calm seas, auspicious gales,  
And sail so expeditious that shall catch

Your royal fleet far off.—My *Ariel*;—chick,—} [*Aside.*

That is thy charge, then to the elements  
Be free, and fare thou well!—Please you, draw near.

[*Exeunt omnes.*

## E P I L O G U E

*Spoken by PROSPERO.*

*NOW my charmes are all o'erthrown.  
 And what strength I have's mine own,  
 Which is most faint : now, 'tis true,  
 I must be here confined by you,  
 Or sent to Naples : let me not,  
 Since I have my dukedom got,  
 And pardon'd the deceiver, dwell  
 In this bare island, by your spell ;  
 But release me from my bands,  
 With the help of your good hands.  
 Gentle breath of yours, my sails  
 Must fill, or else my project fails,  
 Which was to please : Now I want  
 Spirits to enforce, art to enchant :  
 And my ending is despair,  
 Unless I be reliev'd by prayer,  
 Which pierces so, that it assaults  
 Mercy itself, and frees all faults.  
 As you from crimes would pardon'd be,  
 Let your indulgence set me free !*

T H E E N D.









Richter del.

Hartman sculp.

Published in the United States by Bellamy, Edwards & Co. 1870.



Published as the Act directs by Bellamy & Richardson, 1788.



---

THE  
WINTER'S TALE.

---

# DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

## MEN.

LEONTES, *King of Sicilia.*

POLIXENES, *King of Bohemia.*

MAMILLIUS, *young Prince of Sicilia.*

FLORIZEL, *Prince of Bohemia.*

CAMILLO,  
ANTIGONUS,  
CLEOMENES,  
DION, } *Sicilian Lords.*

*Another Sicilian Lord.*

ARCHIDAMUS, *a Bohemian Lord.*

ROGERO, *a Sicilian Gentleman.*

*An Attendant on the young Prince Mamillius.*

*Officers of a Court of Judicature.*

*Old Shepherd, reputed father of Perdita.*

*Clown, his Son.*

*A Mariner.*

*Gaoler.*

*Servant to the old Shepherd.*

AUTOLICUS, *a Rogue.*

TIME, *as Chorus.*

## WOMEN.

HERMIONE, *Queen to Leontes.*

PERDITA, *Daughter to Leontes and Hermione.*

PAULINA, *Wife to Antigonus.*

EMILIA, *a Lady.*

*Two other Ladies.*

MOPSA,  
DORCAS, } *Shepherdesses.*

*Satyrs for a Dance, Shepherds, Shepherdesses, [Guards]  
and Attendants.*

SCENE, *sometimes in Sicilia ; sometimes in Bohemia.*

THE  
WINTER'S TALE.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—*An Antichamber in LEONTES's Palace.*

*Enter CAMILLO and ARCHIDAMUS.*

*Archidamus.*

**I**F you shall chance, Camillo, to visit Bohemia on the like occasion whereon my services are now on foot, you shall see, as I have said, great difference betwixt our Bohemia and your Sicilia.

*Cam.* I think this coming summer the king of Sicilia means to pay Bohemia the visitation which he justly owes him.

*Arch.* Wherein our entertainment shall shame us we will be justified in our loves; for, indeed——

*Cam.* Beseech you ——

*Arch.* Verily, I speak it in the freedom of my knowledge: we cannot with such magnificence—in so rare—I know not what to say.——We will give you sleepy drinks, that your senses, unintelligent of our insufficiency, may, though they cannot praise us, as little accuse us.

*Cam.* You pay a great deal too dear for what's given freely:

*Arch.* Believe me I speak as my understanding instructs me, and as mine honesty puts it to utterance.

*Cam.* Sicilia cannot shew himself over kind to Bohemia: they were trained together in their childhoods; and there rooted betwixt them such an affection which cannot choose but branch now. Since their more mature dignities and royal necessities made separation of their society, their encounters, though not personal, have been royally attorned with interchange of gifts, letters, loving embassies, that they have seem'd to be together, though absent; shook hands as over a Vast; and embrac'd, as it were from the ends of opposite winds. The heavens continue their loves!——

*Arch.* I think there is not in the world either malice or matter to alter it. You have an unspeakable comfort of your young prince Mamillius: it is a gentleman of the greatest promise that ever came into my note.

*Cam.* I very well agree with you in the hopes of him: it is a gallant child; one that indeed physics the subject, makes old hearts fresh: they that went on crutches ere he was born desire yet their life to see him a man.

*Arch.* Would they else be content to die?

*Cam.* Yes; if there were no other excuse why they should desire to live.

*Arch.* If the king had no son they would desire to live on crutches till he had one. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.—*A Room of State.*

*Enter LEONTES, HERMIONE, MAMILLIUS, POLIXENES, and Attendants.*

*Pol.* Nine changes of the watry star hath been  
The shepherd's note since we have left our throne  
Without a burden: time as long again  
Would be fill'd up, my brother, with our thanks;  
And yet we should for perpetuity  
Gehence in debt: and therefore, like a cypher  
Yet standing in rich place, I multiply  
With one, *we thank you*, many thousands more  
That go before it.

*Leo.* Stay your thanks awhile,  
And pay them when you part.

*Pol.* Sir, that's to-morrow.  
I am cussion'd by my fears of what may chance  
Or breed upon our absence; that may blow  
No sneaping winds at home to make us say  
"This is put forth too truly." Besides, I have stay'd  
To tire your royalty.

*Leo.* We are tougher, brother,  
Than you can put us to't.

*Pol.* No longer stay.

*Leo.* One seven-night longer.

*Pol.* Very sooth, to morrow.

*Leo.* We'll part the time between's then; and in that I'll  
no gain saying.

*Pol.* Pricks me not, 'beseech you, so;  
There is no tongue that moves; none, none i'the world  
So soon as your's could win me; so it should now  
Were there necessity in your request, although  
'Twere needful I deny'd it. My affairs  
Do even drag me homeward; which to hinder  
Were in your love a whip to me; my stay



To you a charge and trouble : to save both  
Farewell our brother.

*Leo.* Tongue-ty'd, our queen ? speak you.

*Her.* I had thought, fir, to have held my peace until  
You had drawn oaths from him not to stay. You, fir,  
Charge him too coldly : tell him you are sure  
All in Bohemia's well : this satisfaction  
The by-gone day proclaim'd ; say this to him  
He's beat from his best ward.

*Leo.* Well said, Hermione.

*Her.* To tell he longs to see his son were strong :  
But let him say so then, and let him go ;  
But let him swear so and he shall not stay ;  
We'll thrack him hence with distaffs.  
Yet of your royal presence I'll adventure [To POLIXENES,  
The borrow of a week. When at Bohemia  
You take my lord I'll give you my commission,  
To let him there a month behind the guest  
Prefix'd for his parting : yet (good deed), Leontes,  
I love thee not a jar o'the clock behind  
What lady she her lord. — You'll stay ?

*Pol.* No, madam.

*Her.* Nay but you will.

*Pol.* I may not, verily.

*Her.* Verily ?

You put me of with limber vows : but I,  
Tho' you would seek to unsphere the stars with oaths  
Should yet say, " Sir, no going. *Verily*,  
" You shall not go ; " a lady's *verily* is  
As potent as a lord's. Will you go yet ?  
Force me to keep you as a prisoner,  
Not like a guest ; so you shall pay your fees  
When you depart, and save your thanks. How say you,  
My prisoner ? or my guest ? by your dread *verily*  
One of them you shall be.

*Pol.* Your guest then, madam :

To be your prisoner should import offending ;  
Which is for me less easy to commit  
Than you to punish.

*Her.* Not your gaoler then,  
But your kind hostess. Come, I'll question you  
Of my lord's tricks and your's when you were boys :  
You were pretty lordlings then.

*Pol.* We were, fair queen,  
Two lads that thought there was no more behind,

But such a day to-morrow as to-day,  
And to be boy eternal.

*Her.* Was not my lord the verier wag o'the two?

*Pol.* We were as twinn'd lambs that did frisk i'the sun  
And bleat the one at the other : what we chang'd  
Was innocence for innocence ; we knew not  
The doctrine of ill-doing ; no, nor dream'd  
That any did. Had we pursu'd that life  
And our weak spirits ne'er been higher rear'd  
With stronger blood, we should have answer'd heaven  
Boldly, *Not guilty* ; the imposition clear'd,  
Hereditary ours

*Her.* By this we gather  
You have tript since.

*Pol.* O, my most sacred lady,  
Temptations have since then been born to us : for  
In those unsleg'd days was my wife a girl ;  
Your precious self had then not cross'd the eyes  
Of my young playfellow.

*Her.* Grace to boot !——  
Of this make no conclusion, lest you say  
Your queen and I are devils. Yet go on :  
The offences we have made you do we'll answer ;  
If you first sinn'd with us, and that with us  
You did continue fault, and that you slipt not  
With any but with us.

*Leo.* Is he won yet ?

*Her.* He'll stay, my lord.

*Leo.* At my request he would not.  
Hermione, my dearest, thou ne'er spok'st  
To better purpose.

*Her.* Never ?

*Leo.* Never but once.

*Her.* What ? have I twice said well ? when was't before ?  
I prithee, tell me ; cram us with praise, and make's  
As fat as tame things : one good deed dying tongueless  
Slaughters a thousand waiting upon that.  
Our praises are our wages. You may ride us  
With one soft kiss a thousand furlongs re  
With spur we heat an acre. But to the goal :  
My last good deed was to entreat his stay ;  
What was my first ? It has an elder sister,  
Or I mistake you : O, would her name were *Grace* !  
But once before I spoke to the purpose : when ?  
Nay, let me hav't ; I long.

*Leo.* Why, that was when

Three crabbed months had sour'd themselves to death  
 Ere I could make thee open thy white hand  
 And clepe thyself my love ; then didst thou utter  
 " I am your's for ever !"

*Her.* It is *grace*, indeed.

Why, lo you now, I have spoke to the purpose twice ;  
 The one for ever earn'd a royal husband ;  
 The other for some while a friend.

*Leo.* Too hot, too hot.—

[*Aside.*

To mingling friendship far is mingling bloods.  
 I have *tremor cordis* on me :—my heart dances,  
 But not for joy—not joy—This entertainment  
 May a free face put on ; derive a liberty  
 From heartiness, from bounty, fertile bosom,  
 And well become the agent : it may, I grant ;  
 But to be padding palms and pinching fingers  
 As now they are ; and making practis'd smiles,  
 As in a looking-glass ;—and then to sigh as 'twere  
 The mort o'the deer ; oh, that is entertainment  
 My bosom likes not, nor my brows.—Mamillius,  
 Art thou my boy ?

*Mam.* Ay, my good lord.

*Leo.* P'fects !

Why that's my bawcock, What, hast smutch'd thy nose ?  
 They say it's a copy out of mine, Come, captain,  
 We must be neat ; not neat, but cleanly, captain :  
 And yet the steer, the heifer, and the calf,  
 Are all call'd *neat*. Still virginalling

[*Observing POLIXENES and HERMIONE.*

Upon his palm ;—How now, you wanton calf ;  
 Art thou my calf ?

*Mam.* Yes, if you will, my lord.

*Leo.* Thou want'st a rough pash, and the shoots that I have  
 To be full like me :—yet they say we are  
 Almost as like as eggs ; women say so  
 That will say any thing. But were they false  
 As o'er-dy'd blacks, as winds, as waters ; false  
 As dice are to be wish'd by one that fixes  
 No bourn 'twixt his and mine ; yet were it true  
 To say this boy were like me. Come, sir page,  
 Look on me with your welkin eye. Sweet villain !  
 Most dear'st ! my collop !—can thy dam ?—may't be ?—  
 Affection ; thy intention stabs the centre.  
 Thou dost make possible things not so held !  
 Communicat'st with dreams—(How can this be ?)  
 With what's unreal : thou coactive art,

And fellow'st nothing. Then 'tis very credent  
 Thou may'st cojoin with something; and thou dost  
 (And that beyond commission, and I find it),  
 And that to the infection of my brains  
 And hardening of my brows.

*Pol.* What means Sicilia?

*Her.* He something seems unsettled.

*Pol.* How, my lord?

*Leo.* What cheer? how is't with you, best brother?

*Her.* You look,

As if you held a brow of much distraction.

Are not you mov'd, my lord?

*Leo.* No, in good earnest.

How sometimes nature will betray its folly!

Its tenderness; and make itself a pastime

To harden bosoms! Looking on the lines

Of my boy's face, methought I did recoil

Twenty-three years; and saw myself unbreech'd

In my green velvet coat; my dagger muzzled

Left it should bite its master and so prove,

As ornament oft does, too dangerous.

How like, methought, I then was to this kernel,

This squash, this gentleman. Mine honest friend,

Will you take eggs for money?

*Mam.* No, my lord, I'll fight.

*Leo.* You will!—why happy man be his dole!—My brother,

Are you so fond of your young prince as we

Do seem to be of ours?

*Pol.* If at home, sir,

He's all my exercise; my mirth, my matter:

Now my sworn friend, and then mine enemy;

My parasite, my soldier, statesman, all:

He makes a July's day short as December;

And with his varying childhood cures in me

Thoughts that should thicken my blood.

*Leo.* So stands this 'squire

Offic'd with me: we two will walk, my lord,

And leave you to your graver steps. Hermione,

How thou lov'st us shew in our brother's welcome.

Let what is dear in Sicily be cheap:

Next to thyself and my young rover, he's

Apparent to my heart.

*Her.* If you will seek us

We are yours i'th garden. Shall's attend you there?

*Leo.* To your own bents dispose you; you'll be found,  
 Be you beneath the sky. I am angling now,

Tho' you perceive me not how I give line;

[*Aside, observing HER.*

Go to, go to;

How she holds up the neb, the bill to him!

And arms her with the boldness of a wife.

[*Exeunt POLIX. Her. and Attendance. Manet LEO.*

MAM. and CAM.

To her allowing husband! Gone already,

Inch-thick, knee-deep, o'er head and ears—a fork'd one.—

Go play, boy, play:—thy mother plays, and I

Play too; but so disgrac'd a part whose issue

Will hiss me to my grave: contempt and clamour

Will be my knell.—Go play, boy, play.—There have been,

Or I am much deceiv'd, cuckolds ere now;

And many a man there is even at this present,

Now, while I speak this, holds his wife by the arm,

That little thinks she has been sluic'd in his absence,

And his pond fish'd by his next neighbour, by

Sir Smile, his neighbour: nay, there's comfort in't,

Whiles other men have gates, and these gates open'd

As mine against their will. Should all despair

That have revolted wives, the tenth of mankind

Would hang themselves. Physic for't there is none:

It is a bawdy planet that will strike

Where 'tis predominant; and 'tis powerful, think it

From east, west, north, and south. Be it concluded,

No barricado for a belly. Know it,

It will let in and out the enemy

With bag and baggage: many a thousand of us

Have the disease and feel't not.—How now, boy?

Mam. I am like you, they say.

Leo. Why that's some comfort.

What, Camillo there!

Cam. Ay, my good lord.

Leo. Go play, Mamillius. Thou'rt an honest man.

[*Exit MAMILLIUS.*

Camillo, this great sir will yet stay longer.

Cam. You had much ado to make his anchor hold;

When you cast out it still came home.

Leo. Didst note it?

Cam. He would not stay at your petitions; in de  
His business more material.

Leo. Didst perceive it?

They're here with me already; whispering, rounding,  
Sicilia is a *so forth*: 'tis far gone

When I shall gust it last. How cam't Camillo,  
That he did stay?

*Cam.* At the good queen's entreaty.

*Leo.* At the queen's be't; good should be pertinent,  
But so it is, it is not. Was this taken  
By any understanding pate but thine  
For thy conceit is soaking, will draw in  
More than the common blocks: not noted, is't,  
But of the finer natures? by some severals  
Of head-piece extraordinary? Lower messes,  
Perchance, are to this business purblind: say?

*Cam.* Business, my lord, I think most understand  
Bohemia stays here longer.

*Leo.* Ha!

*Cam.* Stays here longer.

*Leo.* Ay, but why?

*Cam.* To satisfy your highness and the entreaties  
Of our most gracious mistress.

*Leo.* Satisfy

The entreaties of your mistress?—Satisfy?—  
Let that suffice. I have trusted thee, Camillo,  
With all the nearest things to my heart, as well  
My chamber-counsels; wherein, priest-like, thou  
Hast cleans'd my bosom, I from thee departed  
Thy penitent reform'd: but we have been  
Deceiv'd in thy integrity, deceiv'd  
In that which seems so.

*Cam.* Be it forbid, my lord!—

*Leo.* To bide upon't;—thou art not honest: or  
If thou inclin'st that way thou art a coward;  
Which boxes honesty behind, restraining  
From course requir'd. Or else thou must be counted  
A servant grafted in my serious trust  
And therein negligent: or else a fool  
That seest a game play'd home, the rich stake drawn,  
And tak'st it all for jest.

*Cam.* My gracious lord,  
I may be negligent, foolish, and fearful;  
In every one of these no man is free,  
But that his negligence, his folly, fear,  
Amongst the infinite doings of the world  
Sometimes puts forth. In your affairs, my lord,  
If ever I were wilful-negligent  
It was my folly; if industriously  
I play'd the fool, it was my negligence,  
Not weighing well the end; if ever fearful

To do a thing where I the issue doubted,  
Whereof the execution did cry out  
Against the non-performance, 'twas a fear  
Which oft infects the wisest: these, my lord,  
Are such allow'd infirmities that honesty  
Is never free of. But, beseech your grace,  
Be plainer with me; let me know my trespass  
By its own visage: if I then deny it,  
'Tis none of mine.

*Leo.* Have not you seen, Camillo,  
(But that's past doubt: you have, or your eye-glass  
Is thicker than a cuckold's horn), or heard  
(For to a vision so apparent, rumour  
Cannot be mute), or thought (for cogitation  
Resides not in that man that does not think it),  
My wife is slippery? If thou wilt confess  
(Or else be impudently negative,  
To have nor eyes, nor ears, nor thought), then say  
My wife's a hobby-horse; deserves a name  
As rank as any flax wench that puts to  
Before her troth-plight say it, and justify it.

*Cam.* I would not be a stander-by to hear  
My sovereign mistress clouded so without  
My present vengeance taken: 'shrew my heart  
You never spoke what did become you less  
Than this; which to reiterate were sin  
As deep as that tho' true.

*Leo.* Is whispering nothing?  
Is leaning cheek to cheek? is meeting noses?  
Kissing with inside lip? stopping the career  
Of laughter with a sigh? (a note infallible  
Of breaking honesty) horsing foot on foot?  
Skulking in corners? wishing clocks more swift?  
Hours, minutes? the noon midnight? and all eyes  
Blind with the pin and web but theirs, theirs only  
That would, unseen, be wicked? Is this nothing?  
Why then the world and all that's in't is nothing;  
The covering sky is nothing? Bohemia nothing;  
My wife is nothing; nor nothing have these nothings  
If this be nothing.

*Cam.* Good, my lord, be cur'd  
Of this diseas'd opinion, and betimes;  
For 'tis most dangerous.

*Leo.* Say it be, 'tis true.

*Cam.* No, no, my lord.

*Leo.* It is; you lie, you lie.

I say thou liest, Camillo, and I hate thee ;  
 Pronounce thee a gross lout, a mindless slave,  
 Or else a hovering temporizer, that  
 Canst with thine eyes at once see good and evil,  
 Inclining to them both. Were my wife's liver  
 Infected as her life, she would not live  
 The running of one glass.

*Cam.* Who does infect her?

*Leo.* Why, he that wears her like his medal hanging  
 About his neck, Bohemia; who if I  
 Had servants true about me, that bare eyes  
 To see alike mine honour as their profits,  
 Their own particular thrifts, they would do that  
 Which should undo more doing: Ay, and thou  
 His cup-bearer (whom I from meaner form  
 Have bench'd and rear'd to worship, who may'st see  
 Plainly as heaven sees earth and earth sees heaven,  
 How I am gall'd), thou might'st be spice-a-cup  
 To give mine enemy a lasting wink,  
 Which draught to me were cordial.

*Cam.* Sir, my lord,  
 I could do this, and that with no rash portion,  
 But with a ling'ring dram that should not work  
 Maliciously like poison: but I cannot  
 Believe this crack to be in my dread mistress,  
 So sovereignly being honourable.

*Leo.* I have lov'd thee.—Make that thy question and go rot!  
 Dost think I am so muddy, so unsettled,  
 To appoint myself in this vexation? Sully  
 The purity and whiteness of my sheets,  
 Which to preserve is sleep: which being spotted  
 Is goads, thorns, nettle, tails of wasps;  
 Give scandal to the blood of the prince, my son,  
 Who I do think is mine, and love as mine,  
 Without ripe moving to't? Would I do this?  
 Could man so blench?

*Cam.* I must believe you, sir,  
 I do and will fetch off Bohemia for't:  
 Provided that when he's remov'd your highness  
 Will take again your queen as your's at first,  
 Even for your son's sake; and thereby for sealing  
 The injury of tongues in courts and kingdoms  
 Known and ally'd to your's.

*Leo.* Thou dost advise me  
 Even so as I mine own course have set down:  
 I'll give no blemish to her honour, none.



*Cam.* My lord,  
Go then ; and with a countenance as clear  
As friendship wears at feasts, keep with Bohemia,  
And with your queen : I am his cup-bearer ;  
If from me he have wholesome beverage  
Account me not your servant.

*Leo.* This is all :  
Do't, and thou hast one half of my heart ;  
Do't not, and thou split'st thine own.

*Cam.* I'll do't, my lord.

*Leo.* I will seem friendly as thou hast advis'd me. [*Exit.*]

*Cam.* O miserable lady !—But for me,  
What case stand I in ? I must be the prisoner  
Of good Polixenes ; and my ground to do't  
Is the obedience to a master ; one  
Who, in rebellion with himself, will have  
All that are his so too.—To do this deed  
Promotion follows. If I could find example  
Of thousands that had struck anointed kings  
And flourish'd after, I'd not do't : but since  
Nor brass, nor stone, nor parchment, bears not one ;  
Let villainy itself forswear't. I must  
For sake the court : to do't or no, is certain  
To me a break-neck.——Happy star reign now !  
Here comes Bohemia.

*Enter POLIXENES.*

*Pol.* This is strange ! Methinks.  
My favour here begins to warp. Not speak?—  
Good day, Camillo.

*Cam.* Hail, most royal sir !

*Pol.* What is the news i' the court ?

*Cam.* None rare, my lord.

*Pol.* The king hath on him such a countenance  
As he had lost some province, and a region  
Lov'd as he loves himself : even now I met him  
With customary compliment ; when he,  
Wasting his eyes to the contrary, and falling  
A lip of much contempt, speeds from me, and  
So leaves me to consider what is breeding  
That changes thus his manners.

*Cam.* I dare not know, my lord.

*Pol.* How ! dare not ? do not ? Do you know, and dare not ?  
Be intelligent to me 'Tis thereabout :  
For, to yourself what you do know you must,  
And cannot say you dare not. Good Camillo,

Your chang'd complexions are to me a mirror,  
Which shews me mine chang'd too: for I must be  
A party in this alteration, finding  
Myself thus alter'd with it.

*Cam.* There is a sickness  
Which puts some of us in distemper, but  
I cannot name the disease, and it is caught  
Of you that yet are well.

*Pol.* How caught of me?  
Make me not fighted like the basilisk:  
I have look'd on thousands who have sped the better  
By my regard, but kill'd none so. *Camillo,*  
As you are certainly a gentleman, thereto  
Clerk-like experienc'd (which no less adorns  
Our gentry, than our parents' noble names,  
In whose success we are gentle); I beseech you,  
If you know aught which does behove my knowledge  
Thereof to be inform'd, imprison it not  
In ignorant concealment.

*Cam.* I may not answer.

*Pol.* A sickness caught of me, and yet I well!  
I must be answer'd. Dost thou hear, *Camillo,*  
I conjure thee by all the parts of man  
Which honour does acknowledge (whereof the least  
Is not this suit of mine) that thou declare  
What incidency thou dost guess of harm  
Is creeping towards me; how far off, how near,  
Which way to be prevented if it be,  
If not how best to bear it.

*Cam.* Sir, I'll tell you.  
Since I am charg'd in honour, and by him  
That I think honourable. Therefore mark my counsel,  
Which must be even as swiftly follow'd as  
I mean to utter it; or both yourself and me  
Cry, *loft*, and so good night.

*Pol.* On, good *Camillo*.

*Cam.* I am appointed Him to murder you.

*Pol.* By whom, *Camillo*?

*Cam.* By the king.

*Pol.* For what?

*Cam.* He thinks, nay with all confidence he swears  
As he had seen't, or been an instrument  
To vice you to't, that you have touch'd his queen  
Forbiddenly.

*Pol.* Oh, then my best blood turn  
To an infected jelly; and my name  
Be yok'd with his that did betray the best!

Turn then my freshest reputation to  
 A favour that may strike the dullest nostril  
 Where I arrive; and my approach be thunn'd,  
 Nay, hated too worse than the great'st infection  
 That e'er was heard or read!

*Cam.* Swear this though over  
 By each particular star in heaven, and  
 By all their influences, you may as well  
 Forbid the sea for to obey the moon  
 As or by oath remove, or counsel shake,  
 The fabric of his folly whose foundation  
 Is pil'd upon his faith, and will continue  
 The standing of his body.

*Pol.* How should this grow?

*Cam.* I know not: but I am sure 'tis safer to  
 Avoid what's grown than question how 'tis born.  
 If, therefore, you dare trust my honesty,  
 That lies inclosed in this trunk, which you  
 Shall bear along impawn'd away to-night.  
 Your followers I will whisper to the business;  
 And will by twos and threes at several posterns  
 Clear them o'the city. For myself I'll put  
 My fortunes to your service, which are here  
 By this discovery lost. Be not uncertain;  
 For, by the honour of my parents, I  
 Have utter'd truth; which if you seek to prove,  
 I dare not stand by; nor shall you be safer  
 Than one condemned by the king's own mouth;  
 Thereon his execution sworn.

*Pol.* I do believe thee:

I saw his heart in's face. Give me thy hand;  
 Be pilot to me and thy places shall  
 Still neighbour mine. My ships are ready, and  
 My people did expect my hence departure  
 Two days ago.—This jealousy  
 Is for a precious creature: as she's rare,  
 Must it be great; and, as his person's mighty,  
 Must it be violent; and as he does conceive  
 He is dishonour'd by a man which ever  
 Profess'd to him, why his revenges must  
 In that be made more bitter. Fear o'er shades me:  
 Good expedition be my friend, and comfort  
 The gracious queen; part of his theme, but nothing  
 Of his ill-ta'en suspicion! Come, Camillo,  
 I will respect thee as a father if  
 Thou bear'st my life off hence. Let us avoid.

*Cam.* It is in mine authority to command  
The keys of all the posterns : please your highness  
To take the urgent hour. Come, sir, away. [Exeunt.]

## A C T II.

SCENE I.—*The Palace.*

*Enter HERMIONE, MAMILLIUS, and Ladies.*

*Hermione.*

TAKE the boy to you : he so troubles me;  
'Tis past enduring.

1 *Lady.* Come, my gracious lord,  
Shall I be your play-fellow?

*Mam.* No, I'll none of you.

1 *Lady.* Why; my sweet lord?

*Mam.* You'll kifs me hard, and speak to me as if I were a  
baby still. I love you better.

2 *Lady.* And why so, my lord?

*Mam.* Not for because  
Your brows are blacker (yet black brows, they say,  
Become some women best; so that there be not  
Too much hair there, but in a semicircle,  
Or a half moon made with a pen).

2 *Lady.* Who taught you this?

*Mam.* I learn'd it out of women's faces. Pray now,  
What colour are your eye-brows.

1 *Lady.* Blue, my lord.

*Mam.* Nay, that's a mock : I've seen a lady's nose  
That has been blue, but not her eye-brows.

2 *Lady.* Hark ye;  
The queen, your mother, rounds apace : we shall  
Present our services to a fine new prince  
One of these days ; and then you'll wanton with us,  
If we would have you.

2 *Lady.* She is spread of late  
Into a goodly bulk ; good time encounter her !

*Her.* What wisdom stirs amongst you ? Come, sir, now  
I am for you again. Pray you fit by us  
And tell us a tale.

*Mam.* Merry or sad shall it be?

*Her.* As merry as you will.

*Mam.* A sad tale's best for winter :  
I have one of sprights and goblins.

*Her.* Let's have that, good sir.  
Come on, sit down. Come on, and do your best  
To fright me with your sprights ; you're powerful at it!

*Mam.* There was a man——

*Her.* Nay, come, sit down; then on.

*Mam.* Dwelt by a churchyard:—I will tell it softly:  
Yon crickets shall not hear it.

*Her.* Come on then, and give't me in mine ear.

*Enter LEONTES, ANTIGONUS, and Lords.*

*Leo.* Was he met there? his train? Camillo with him?

*Lord.* Behind the tuft of pines I met them; never  
Saw I men scour so on their way: I ey'd them  
Even to their ships.

*Leo.* How blest am I

In my just censure! in my true opinion!  
Alack, for lesser knowledge!—How accurs'd  
In being so blest! There may be in the cup  
A spider steep'd, and one may drink, depart,  
And yet partake no venom, for his knowledge  
Is not infected! but if one present  
The abhorr'd ingredient to his eye, make known  
How he hath drunk, he cracks his gorge, his sides,  
With violent hefts;—I have drunk and seen the spider.—  
Camillo was his help in this, his pander:  
There is a plot against my life, my crown;  
All's true that is mistrusted: that false villian  
Whom I employ'd was pre-employ'd by him:  
He hath discover'd my design, and I  
Remain a pinch'd thing; yea, a very trick  
For them to play at will. How came the posterns  
So easily open?

*Lord.* By his great authority,  
Which often hath no less prevail'd than so  
On your command.

*Leo.* I know't too well.——

Give me the boy; [*To HERMIONE.*] I am glad you did not  
nurse him;

Though he does bear some signs of me, yet you  
Have too much blood in him.——

*Her.* What is this; sport?

*Leo.* Bear the boy hence, he shall not come about her;  
Away with him; and let her sport herself  
With that she's big with: for it is Polixenes  
Has made her swell thus.

*Her.* But I'd say he had not;  
And I'll be sworn you would believe my saying,  
Howe'er you lean to the nayward.

*Leo.* You, my lords,  
 Look on her, mark her well ; be but about  
 To say *she is goodly lady*, and  
 The justice of your hearts will thereto add,  
 'Tis pity *she's not honest, honourable* ;  
 Praise her but for this her without-door form  
 (Which on my faith deserves high speech), and straight  
 The shrug, the hum, or ha—these petty brands  
 That calumny doth use. Oh, I am out——  
 That mercy does ; for calumny will fear  
 Virtue itself.—These shrugs, these hums, and ha's,  
 When you have said *she's goodly*, come between,  
 Ere you can say *she's honest*. But be it known  
 (From him that has most cause to grieve it should be)  
 See's an adulteress.

*Her.* Should a villain say so,  
 The most replenish'd villain in the world,  
 He were as much more villain. You, my lord,  
 Do but mistake.

*Leo.* You have mistook, my lady,  
 Polixenes for Leontes. O thou thing  
 Which I'll not call a creature of thy place,  
 Left barbarism, making me the precedent,  
 Should a like language use to all degrees,  
 And mannerly distinction leave out  
 Betwixt the prince and beggar !—I have said  
 She's an adulteress ;—I have said with whom ;  
 More, she's a traitor ; and Camillo is  
 A federary with her ; and one that knows  
 What she should shame to know herself  
 But with her most vile principal, that she's  
 A bed-swarver, even as bad as those  
 That vulgars give bold titles ; ay, and privy  
 To this their late escape.

*Her.* No, by my life,  
 Privy to none of this. How will this grieve you  
 When you shall come to clearer knowledge that  
 You have thus publish'd me ; Gentle my lord,  
 You scarce can right me thoroughly then, to say  
 You did mistake.

*Leo.* No, if I mistake  
 In these foundations which I build upon,  
 The centre is not big enough to bear  
 A school-boy's top. Away with her to prison ;  
 He who shall speak for her is far off guilty,  
 But that he speaks.

*Her.* There's some ill planet reigns :  
 I must be patient till the heavens look  
 With an aspect more favourable. Good, my lords,  
 I am not prone to weeping as our sex  
 Commonly are; the want of which vain dew,  
 Perchance, shall dry your pities but I have  
 That honourable grief log'd here, which burns  
 Worse than tears drown : 'Beseech you all, my lords,  
 With thought so qualified as your charities  
 Shall best instruct you; measure me ; and so  
 The king's will be perform'd !——

*Leo.* Shall I be heard ?

*Her.* Who is't that goes with me ? 'beseech your highness,  
 My women may be with me ; for, you see,  
 My plight requires it Do not weep, good fools, [*To her Ladies.*  
 There is no cause : when you shall know your mistress  
 Hath deserv'd prison then abound in tears  
 As I come out : this action I now go on  
 Is for my better grace. Adieu, my lord,  
 I never wish'd to see you sorry ; now,  
 I trust, I shall —— My women——come ; you have leave.

*Leo.* Go, do our bidding , hence. [*Exit Queen guarded.*

*Lord.* 'Beseech your highness, call the queen again.

*Ant.* Be certain what you do, sir, lest your justice  
 Prove violence, in the which three great ones suffer ;  
 Yourself, your queen, your son.

*Lord.* For her, my lord,  
 I dare my life lay down, and will do't, sir,  
 Please you to accept it, that the queen is spotless  
 I'the eyes of heaven, and to you ; I mean  
 In this which you accuse her.

*Ant.* If it prove  
 She's otherwise, I'll keep my stables where  
 I lodge my wife ; I'll go in couples with her ;  
 That when I feel and see her, no further trust her ;  
 For every inch of woman in the world,  
 Ay, every dram of woman's flesh is false  
 If she be.

*Leo.* Hold your peace.

*Lord.* Good, my lord.

*Ant.* It is for you we speak, not for ourselves :  
 You are abus'd, and by some putter on  
 That will be damn'd for't ; would I knew the villain,  
 I would land-damn him : Be she honour-flaw'd,  
 I have three daughters, the eldest is eleven,

The second and the third nine, and some five ;  
 If this prove true they'll pay for't ;——By mine honour,  
 I'll geld 'em all : fourteen they shall not see  
 To bring false generations : they are coheirs,  
 And I had rather glib myself than they  
 Should not produce fair issue.

*Leo.* Cease ; no more :  
 You smell this business with a sense as cold  
 As is a dead man's nose : I see't and feel't,  
 As you feel doing thus ; and see withal  
 The instruments that feel. [Striking his Brows.]

*Ant.* If it be so  
 We need no grave to bury honesty ;  
 There's not a grain of it the face to sweeten  
 Of the whole dungy earth.

*Leo.* What, lack I credit ?

*Lord.* I had rather you did lack, than I, my lord,  
 Upon this ground ; and more it would content me  
 To have her honour true than your suspicion,  
 Be blam'd for't how you might.

*Leo.* Why what need we  
 Commune with you of this ? but rather follow  
 Our forceful instigation ? Our prerogative  
 Calls not your counsels, but our natural goodness  
 Imparts this ; which if you (or stupified  
 Or seeming so in skill) cannot or will not  
 Relish as truth, like us, inform yourselves,  
 We need no more of your advice ; the matter,  
 The loss, the gain, the ord'ring on't, is all  
 Properly ours.

*Ant.* And I wish, my liege,  
 You had only in your silent judgment try'd it  
 Without more overture.

*Leo.* How could that be ?  
 Either thou art most ignorant by age,  
 Or thou wert born a fool. Camillo's flight  
 Added to their familiarity  
 (Which was as gross as ever touch'd conjecture,  
 That lack'd sight only, nought for approbation,  
 But only seeing all other circumstances  
 Made up to the deed), do push on this proceeding :  
 Yet, for a greater confirmation  
 (For in an act of this importance 'twere  
 Most piteous to be wild), I have dispatch'd in post  
 To sacred Delphos, to Apollo's temple,  
 Cleomenes and Dion, whom you know



Of stuff'd sufficiency. Now, from the oracle  
They will bring all; whose spiritual counsel had  
Shall stop or spur me. Have I done well?

*Lord.* Well done, my lord.

*Leo.* Though I am satisfy'd and need no more  
Than what I know, yet shall the oracle  
Give rest to the minds of others; such as he  
Whose ignorant credulity will not  
Come up to the truth. So have we thought it good  
From our free person she should be confin'd;  
Lest that the treachery of the two fled hence  
Be left her to perform. Come, follow us,  
We are to speak in public: for this business  
Will raise us all.

*Ant* [*Aside.*] To laughter, as I take it,  
If the good truth were known.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.—*A Prison.*

*Enter PAULINA and Gentleman.*

*Paul.* The keeper of the prison—call to him; [*Ex. Gent.*  
Let him have knowledge who I am. Good lady!  
No court in Europe is too good for thee;  
What dost thou then in prison? Now, good sir.

*Re-enter Gentleman with the Gaoler.*

You know me, do you not?

*Gaol.* For a worthy lady,  
And one whom I much honour.

*Paul.* Pray you then  
Conduct me to the queen.

*Gaol.* I may not, madam; to the contrary  
I have exprefs commandment.

*Paul.* Here's ado,  
To lock up honesty and honour from  
The access of gentle visitors! Is it lawful,  
Pray you, to see her women? any of them?  
Emilia?

*Gaoler.* So please you, madam,  
To put apart these you attendants, I  
Shall bring Emilia forth.

*Paul.* I pray you now  
Call her. Withdraw yourselves.

*Exeunt Gent.*

*Gaul.* And, madam, I must  
Be present at your conference.

*Paul.* Well ; be it so, prithee. Here is such ado [*Ex. Gaul.*]  
To make no stain a stain as passeth colouring.

*Enter EMILIA*

Dear gentlewoman, how fares our gracious lady ?

*Emil.* As well as one so great and so forlorn  
May hold together. On her frights and griefs  
(Which never tender lady hath borne greater),  
She is something before her time deliver'd.

*Paul.* A boy ?

*Emil.* A daughter ; and a goodly babe,  
Lusty, and like to live. The queen receives  
Much comfort in't : says, *My poor prisoner,*  
*I am as innocent as you.*

*Paul.* I dare be sworn ;——

These dangerous unsafe lures o'the king, beshrew them,  
He must be told on't, and he shall : the office  
Becomes a woman best ; I'll take't upon me.  
If I prove honey-mouth'd let my tongue blister ;  
And never to my red-look'd anger be  
The trumpet any more. Pray you, Emilia,  
Commend my best obedience to the queen :  
If she dares trust me with her little babe  
I'll shew't the king, and undertake to be  
Her advocate to th' loudest. We do not know  
How he may soften at the sight o'the child :  
The silence often of pure innocence  
Persuades when speaking fails.

*Emil.* Most worthy madam,  
Your honour and your goodness is so evident  
That your free undertaking cannot miss  
A thriving issue : there is no lady living  
So meet for this great errand. Please your ladyship  
To visit the next room, I'll presently  
Acquaint the queen of your most noble offer ;  
Who but to day hammer'd of this design,  
But durst not tempt a minister of honour,  
Lest she should be deny'd.

*Paul.* Tell her, Emilia,  
I'll use that tongue I have ; if wit flow from it  
As boldness from my bosom let it not be doubted  
I shall do good.

*Emil.* No be you blest for it !  
I'll to the queen : please you come something nearer.

*Gaul.* Madam, if't please the queen to send the babe  
I know not what I shall incur to pass it,  
Having no warrant.

*Paul.* You need not fear it, sir :  
The child was prisoner to the womb ; and is  
By law and process of great nature thence  
Freed and enfranchis'd ; not a party to  
The anger of the king ; nor guilty of,  
If any be, the trespass of the queen.

*Gaul.* I do believe it.

*Paul.* Do not you fear ; upon mine honour I  
Will stand betwixt you and danger.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*Changes to the Palace.*

*Enter* LEONTES, ANTIGONUS, *Loras, and other Attendants.*

*Leo.* Nor night nor day no rest :—It is but weakness  
To bear the matter thus ; mere weakness, if  
The cause were not in being ;—part o'the cause,  
She, the adulteress ;—for the harlot king  
Is quite beyond mine arm, out of the blank  
And level of my brain, plot-proof : but she  
I can hook to me : say that she were gone,  
Given to the fire, a moiety of my rest  
Might come to me again. Who's there ?

*Enter an Attendant.*

*Atten.* My lord !

*Leo.* How does the boy ?

*Atten.* He took good rest to-night ; 'tis hop'd  
His sickness is discharg'd.

*Leo.* To see his nobleness !  
Conceiving the dishonour of his mother  
He straight declin'd, droop'd, took it deeply,  
Fasten'd and fix'd the shame on't in himself,  
'Threw off his spirit, his appetite, his sleep,  
And downright languish'd, Leave me solely ; go, [*Ex. Atten.*]  
See how he fares.—Fy, fy ! no thought of him ;  
The very thought of my revenges that way  
Recoil upon me ; in himself too mighty,  
And in his parties, his alliance—let him be  
Until a time may serve. For present vengeance  
Take it on her. Camillo and Polixenes  
Laugh at me, make their pastime at my sorrow ;

They should not laugh if I could reach them ; nor  
Shall she within my power.

*Enter PAULINA with a Child.*

*Lord.* You must not enter.

*Paul.* Nay, rather, good my lord, be second to me :  
Fear you his tyrannous passion more, alas !  
Than the queen's life ? a gracious innocent soul,  
More free than he is jealous.

*Ant.* That's enough.

*Atten.* Madam, he hath not slept to-night ; commanded  
None should come at him.

*Paul.* Not so hot, good sir ;  
I come to bring him sleep. 'Tis such as you  
That creep like shadows by him, and do sigh  
At each his needless heavings ;—such as you  
Nourish the cause of his awaking : I  
Do come with words as med'cinal as true ;  
Honest as either ; to purge him of that humour  
That presses him from sleep.

*Leo.* What noise there, ho ?

*Paul.* No noise, my lord, but needful conference  
About some gossip for your highness.

*Leo.* How !

Away with that audacious lady.—Antigonus,  
I charg'd thee that she should not come about me,  
I knew she would.

*Ant.* I told her so, my lord,  
On your displeasure's peril, and on mine,  
She should not visit you.

*Leo.* What can't not rule her ?

*Paul.* From all dishonesty he can : in this  
(Unless he take the course that you have done,  
Commit me for committing honour), trust it  
He shall not rule me.

*Ant.* Lo you now ; you hear !  
When she will take the rein I let her run,  
But she'll not stumble.

*Paul.* Good my liege, I come——  
And, I beseech you, hear me, who profess  
Myself your loyal servant, your physician,  
Your most obedient counsellor ; yet that dares  
Less appear to in comforting your evils  
Than such as most seems your's. I say I come  
From your good queen.

*Leo.* Good queen !

*Paul.* Good queen, my lord, good queen ! I say good queen ;  
And would by combat make her good, to were I  
A man the worst about you.

*Leo.* Force her hence.

*Paul.* Let him that makes but trifles of his eyes  
First hand me. On mine own accord I'll off,  
But first I'll do my errand — The good queen,  
For she is good, hath brought you forth a daughter :  
Here'tis, commends it to your blessing. [*Laying down the Child.*

*Leo.* Out !

A mankind witch ! Hence with her out o'the door :—  
A most intelligencing bawd !

*Paul.* Not so :

I am as ignorant in that as you  
In so entitling me ; and no less honest  
Than you are mad ; which is enough, I'll warrant,  
As this world goes to pass for honest.

*Leo.* Traitors !

Will you not push her out ? Give her the bastard. [*To ANT.*  
Thou dotard, thou art woman-tir'd ; unrooted  
By thy dame Partlet here. Take up the bastard,  
Take't up, I say ; give't to thy crone.

*Paul.* For ever

Unvenerable be thy hands, if thou  
Tak'st up the princess by that forced baseness  
Which he has put upon't !

*Leo.* He dreads his wife !

*Paul.* So I would you did ; then 'twere past all doubt  
You'd call your children your's

*Leo.* A nest of traitors !

*Ant.* I am none, by this good light.

*Paul.* Nor I ; nor any

But one that's here, and that's himself :—For he  
The sacred honour of himself, his queen's,  
His hopeful son's, his babe's betrays to slander,  
Whose sting is sharper than the sword's, and will not  
(For as the case now stands, it is a curse  
He cannot be compell'd to't) once remove  
The root of his opinion, which is rotten  
As ever oak or stone was found.

*Leo.* A callet

Of boundless tongue ; who late hath beat her husband,  
And now baits me.—This brat is none of mine,  
It is the issue of Polixenes.—  
Hence with it ; and, together with the dam,  
Commit them to the fire.

*Paul.* It is your's ;  
 And, might we lay the old proverb to your charge,  
 So like you 'tis the worse. Behold, my lords,  
 Altho' the print be little, the whole matter  
 And copy of the father : eye, nose, lip,  
 The trick of his frown, his forehead, nay the valley,  
 The pretty dimples of his chin and cheek, his smiles,  
 The very mould and frame of hand, nail, finger. —  
 And thou, good goddess Nature, which hast made it  
 So like to him that got it, if thou hast  
 The ordering of the mind too, 'mongst all colours  
 No yellow in't, lest she suspect, as he does,  
 Her children not her husband's !

*Leo.* A gross hag !  
 And, lozel, thou art worthy to be hang'd  
 That wilt not stay her tongue.

*Ant.* Hang all the husbands  
 That cannot do that feat, you'll leave yourself  
 Hardly one subject.

*Leo.* Once more, take her hence.

*Paul.* A most unworthy and unnatural lord  
 Can do no more.

*Leo.* I'll have thee burnt.

*Paul.* I care not ;  
 It is an heretic that makes the fire,  
 Not she which burns in't. I'll not call you tyrant ;  
 But this most cruel usage of your queen  
 (Not able to produce more accusation  
 Than your own weak-hing'd fancy) something favours  
 Of tyranny, and will ignoble make you,  
 Yea, scandalous to the world.

*Leo.* On your allegiance  
 Out of the chamber with her. Were I tyrant  
 Where were her life ? she durst not call me so  
 If she did know me one. Away with her,

*Paul.* I pray you do not push me, I'll be gone.  
 Look to your babe, my lord, 'tis your's : Jove send her  
 A better guiding spirit ! — What need these hands ?  
 You that are thus so tender o'er his follies  
 Will never do him good, not one of you.  
 So so ; farewell ; we are gone.

[Exit.]

*Leo.* Thou, traitor, hast set thy wife on to this. —  
 My child ! away with't ! Even thou, that hast  
 A heart so tender o'er it, take it hence  
 And see it instantly consum'd with fire ;  
 Even thou, and none but thou. Take it up straight ;

Within this hour bring me word it is done  
 (And by good testimony), or I'll seize thy life  
 With what thou else call'st thine. If thou refuse,  
 And wilt encounter with my wrath, say so ;  
 'The bastard brains with these my proper hands  
 Shall I dash out. Go, take it to the fire,  
 For thou sett'st on thy wife.

*Ant.* I did not, sir :

These lords, my noble fellows, if they please  
 Can clear me in't.

*Lord.* We can. My royal liege,  
 He is not guilty of her coming hither.

*Leo.* You are liars all.

*Lord.* 'Beseech your highness give us better credit :  
 We have always truly serv'd you ; and beseech you  
 So to esteem of us : And on our knees we beg  
 (As recompence of our dear services  
 Past and to come) that you do change this purpose  
 Which being so horrible, so bloody, must  
 Lead on to some foul issue. We all kneel—— [*They kneel.*]

*Leo.* I am a feather for each wind that blows :  
 Shall I live on to see this bastard kneel  
 And call me father ? better burn it now  
 Than curse it then. But be it ; let it live :  
 —It shall not neither.—You, sir, come you hither :

[*To ANTIGONUS,*

You that have been so tenderly officious  
 With lady Margery, your midwife, there,  
 To save this bastard's life (for 'tis a bastard  
 So sure as this beard's grey), what will you adventure  
 To save this brat's life ?

*Ant.* Any thing my lord, my lord,  
 That my ability may undergo,  
 And nobleness impose : at least, thus much ;  
 I'll pawn the little blood which I have left  
 To save the innocent : any thing possible.

*Leo.* It shall be possible ; swear by this sword  
 Thou wilt perform my bidding.

*Ant.* I will my lord.

*Leo.* Mark and perform it ; (seest thou ? for the fall  
 Of any point in't shall not only be  
 Death to thyself, but to thy lewd-tongu'd wife,  
 Whom for this time we pardon. We enjoin thee,  
 As thou art liege man to us, that thou carry  
 This female bastard hence, and that thou bear it  
 To some remote and desert place quite out ;

Of our dominions ; and that there thou leave it,  
 Without more mercy to its own protection  
 And favour of the climate. As by strange fortune  
 It came to us, I do in justice charge thee  
 On thy soul's peril, and thy body's torture,  
 That thou commend it strangely to some place  
 Where chance may nurse or end it. Take it up.

*Ant.* I swear to do this ; tho' a present death  
 Had been more merciful. Come on, poor babe :  
 Some powerful spirit instruct the kites and ravens  
 To be thy nurses ! Wolves and bears, they say,  
 Casting their savageness aside, have done  
 Like offices of pity.—Sir, be prosperous  
 In more than this deed does require ! and blessing  
 Against this cruelty fight on thy side.  
 Poor thing, condemn'd to loss ! [Exit with the Child.]

*Leo.* No ; I'll not rear  
 Another's issue.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Please your highness, posts  
 From those you sent to the oracle are come  
 An hour since. Cleomenes and Dion,  
 Being well arriv'd from Delphos, are both landed,  
 Hastning to the court.

*Lord.* So please you, sir, their speed  
 Hath been beyond account.

*Leo.* Twenty-three days  
 They have been absent : 'Tis good speed, foretels  
 The great Apollo suddenly will have  
 The truth of this appear. Prepare you, lords ;  
 Summon the session that we may arraign  
 Our most disloyal lady : for, as she hath  
 Been publicly accus'd, so shall she have  
 A just and open trial. While she lives  
 My heart will be a burden to me. Leave me,  
 And think upon my bidding. [Exeunt severally.]

### A C T III.

SCENE I.—*A Part of Sicily, near the Sea-side.*

*Enter CLEOMENES and DION, with Attendants.*

*Cleomenes.*

**T**HE climate's delicate ; the air most sweet ;  
 Fertile the isle ; the temple much surpassing  
 The common praise it bears.



*Dion.* I shall report,  
For most it caught me, the celestial habits  
(Methinks I should term them, and the reverence  
Of the grave wearers. O, the sacrifice!  
How ceremonious, solemn, and unearthly  
It was i'the offering!

*Cleo.* But of all, the burst  
And the ear deaf'ning voice o'the oracle,  
Kin to Jove's thunder, so surpris'd my sense  
That I was nothing.

*Dion.* If the event o'the journey  
Prove as succesful to the queen (O be't so!)  
As it hath been to us, rare, pleasant, speedy,  
The time is worth the use on't.

*Cleo.* Great Apollo  
Turn all to the best! These proclamations  
So forcing faults upon Hermione,  
I little like.

*Dion.* The violent carriage of it  
Will clear or end the business. When the oracle  
(Thus by Apollo's great divine seal'd up)  
Shall the contents discover, something rare  
Even then will rush to knowledge.—Go—fresh horses;—  
And gracious be the issue. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.—*A Court of Justice.*

LEONTES, *Lords, and Officers, appear properly seated.*

*Leo.* This session (to our great grief we pronounce),  
Even pushes 'gainst our heart. The party try'd,  
'The daughter of a king; our wife, and one  
Of us too much belov'd.—Let us be clear'd  
Of being tyrannous, since we so openly  
Proceed in justice; which shall have due course  
Even to the guilt or the purgation.—  
Produce the prisoner.

*Off.* It is his highness' pleasure that the queen  
Appear in person here in court.—Silence.

HERMIONE *is brought in guarded; PAULINA and Ladies attending.*

*Leo.* Read the indictment.

*Off.* "Hermione, queen to the worthy Leontes. king of  
" Sicilia, thou art here accused and arraigned of high treason

" in committing adultery with Polixenes, king of Bohemia;  
 " and conspiring with Camillo to take away the life of our  
 " sovereign lord the king, thy royal husband : the pretence  
 " whereof being by circumstances partly laid open, thou,  
 " Hermione, contrary to the faith and allegiance of a true  
 " subject, didst counsel and aid them for their better safety  
 " to fly away by night."

*Her.* Since what I am to say must be but that  
 Which contradicts my accusation ; and  
 The testimony on my part no other  
 But what comes from myself ; it shall scarce boot me  
 To say, *Not guilty* : mine integrity  
 Being counted falsehood, shall, as I express it,  
 Be so receiv'd. But thus—if powers divine  
 Behold our human actions, as they do,  
 I doubt not then but innocence shall make  
 False accusation blush, and tyranny  
 Tremble at patience.—You, my lord, best know,  
 Who least will seem to do so, my past life  
 Hath been as continent, as chaste, as true  
 As I am now unhappy ; which is more  
 Than history can pattern, though devis'd  
 And play'd to take spectators. For behold me  
 A fellow of the royal bed, which owe  
 A moiety of the throne, a great king's daughter,  
 The mother to a hopeful prince here standing  
 To prate and talk for life and honour 'fore  
 Who please to come and hear. For life, I prize it  
 As I weigh grief which I would spare : for honour,  
 'Tis a derivative from me to mine,  
 And only that I stand for. I appeal.  
 To your own conscience, sir, before Polixenes  
 Came to your court how I was in your grace,  
 How merited to be so : Since he came,  
 With what encounter so uncurrent I  
 Have strain'd to appear thus ? if one jot beyond  
 The bounds of honour, or in act or will  
 That way inclining, hard'ned be the hearts  
 Of all that hear me, and my near'st of kin  
 Cry, Fy, upon my grave !

*Leo.* I ne'er heard yet  
 That any of those bolder vices wanted  
 Less impudence to gainsay what they did  
 Than to perform it first.

*Her.* That's true enough ;  
Though 'tis a saying, fir not due to me.

*Leo.* You will not own it.

*Her.* More than mistress of  
What comes to me in name of fault, I must not  
At all acknowledge. For Polixenes  
(With whom I am accus'd), I do confess  
I lov'd him as in honour he requir'd,  
With such a kind of love as might become  
A lady like me ; with a love even such,  
So, and no other, as yourself commanded ;  
Which not to have done I think had bin in me  
Both disobedience and ingratitude  
To you, and toward your friend, whose love had spoke  
Even since it could speak, from an infant, freely  
That it was your's. Now, for conspiracy  
I know not how it tastes, though it be dish'd  
For me to try how : all I know of it  
Is, that Camillo was an honest man ,  
And why he left your court the gods themselves  
(Wotting no more than I) are ignorant.

*Leo.* You know of his departure, as you know  
What you have underta'en to do in his absence.

*Her.* Sir,  
You speak a language that I understand not :  
My life stands in the level of your dreams,  
Which I'll lay down.

*Leo.* Your actions are my dreams ;  
You had a bastard by Polixenes,  
And I but dream'd. — As you were past all shame  
(Those of your fact are so), so past all truth ;  
Which to deny concerns more than avails : for as  
Thy brat hath been cast out, like to itself,  
No father owning it (which is, indeed,  
More criminal in thee than it), so thou  
Shalt feel our justice, in whose easiest passage  
Look for no less than death.

*Her.* Sir, spare your threats ;  
The bug which you would fright me with I seek.  
To me can life be no commodity ;  
The crown and comfort my life, your favour,  
I do give lost, for I do feel it gone,  
But know not how it went. My second joy,  
The first-fruits of my body, from his presence  
I am barr'd like one infectious. My third comfort,  
Starr'd most unluckily, is from my breast

The innocent milk in its most innocent mouth  
 Hal'd out to murder ; myself on every post  
 Proclaim'd a strumpet ; with immodest hatred  
 The childbed privilege deny'd which 'longs  
 To women of all fashion. Lastly, hurried  
 Here to this place i'the open air before  
 I have got strength of limit. Now, my liege,  
 Tell me what blessings I have here alive  
 That I should fear to die ? Therefore proceed :  
 But yet hear this ; mistake me not ; —No life  
 I prize it not a straw : but for mine honour  
 (Which I would free), if I should be condemn'd  
 Upon surmises (all proofs sleeping else  
 But what your jealousies awake), I tell you,  
 'Tis rigour and not law. Your honour's all,  
 I do refer me to the oracle ;  
 Apollo be my judge.

*Enter DION and CLEOMENES.*

*Lord.* This your request  
 Is altogether just ; therefore bring forth,  
 And in Apollo's name, his oracle.

*Her.* The emperor of Russia was my father :  
 Oh, that he were alive and here beholding  
 His daughter's trial ! that he did but see  
 The flatness of my misery ; yet with eyes  
 Of pity, not revenge !

*Off.* You here shall swear upon the sword of justice,  
 That you Cleomenes and Dion have  
 Been both at Delphos, and from thence have brought  
 This seal'd-up oracle, by the hand deliver'd  
 Of great Apollo's priest ; and that since then  
 You have not dar'd to break the holy seal,  
 Nor read the secrets in't.

*Cleo. Dion.* All this we swear.

*Leo.* Break up the seals and read.

*Off.* "Hermione is chaste, Polixenes blameless, Camillo  
 "a true subject, Leontes a jealous tyrant, his innocent babe  
 "truly begotten ; and the king shall live without an heir if  
 "that which is lost be not found."

*Lords.* Now blessed be the great Apollo !

*Her.* Praised !

*Leo.* Hast thou read the truth ?

*Off.* Ay, my lord, even so as it is here set down.

*Leo.* There is no truth at all i'the oracle ;  
 The session shall proceed ! this is mere falsehood.

*Enter Servant.*

*Ser.* My lord the king, the king !—

*Leo.* What is the business ?

*Ser.* O sir, I shall be hated to report it.

The prince your son with mere conceit and fear  
Of the queen's speed is gone.

*Leo.* How ! gone ?

*Ser.* Is dead.

*Leo.* Apollo's angry ; and the heavens themselves  
Do strike at my injustice.—How now, there ?

*HERMIONE faints.*

*Paul.* This news is mortal to the queen : look down  
And see what death is doing.

*Leo.* Take her hence ;

Her heart is but o'ercharg'd ; she will recover.

[*Exeunt PAULINA and Ladies, with HERMIONE.*]

I have too much believ'd mine own suspicion :—

'Beseech you tenderly apply to her

Some remedies for life.—Apollo, pardon

My great prophaneness 'gainst thine oracle !—

I'll reconcile me to Polixenes ;

New woo my queen ; recall the good Camillo,

Whom I proclaim a man of truth, of mercy :

For, being transported by my jealousies

To bloody thoughts and to revenge, I chose

Camillo for the minister to poison

My friend Polixenes ; which had been done,

But that the good mind of Camillo tardy'd

My swift command ; tho' I with death, and with

Reward, did threaten and encourage him,

Not doing it, and being done : he (most humane,

And fill'd with honour), to my kingly guest

Unclass'd my practise ; quit his fortunes here,

Which you knew great, and to the certain hazard

Of all incertainties himself commended,

No richer than his honour. How he glisters

Through my dark rust ! and how his piety

Does my deeds make the blacker !

*Enter PAULINA.*

*Paul.* Woe the while !

O, cut my lace, lest my heart cracking it

Break too !—

*Lord.* What fit is this, good lady ?

*Paul.* What studied torments, tyrant hast for me ?  
What wheels ? racks ? fires ? What flaying ? boiling burn-  
ing

In leads, or oils ? what old or newer torture  
Must I receive, whose every word deserves  
To taste of thy most worst ? Thy tyranny  
Together working with thy jealousies,  
Fancies too weak for boys, too green and idle  
For girls of nine ! O, think what they have done,  
And then run mad indeed, stark mad ; for all  
Thy by-gone fooleries were but spices of it.  
That thou betray'dst Polixenes, 'twas nothing ;  
That did but shew thee of a fool inconstant,  
And damnable ungrateful : nor was't much,  
Thou would'st have poison'd good Camillo's honour,  
To have him kill a king : poor trespasses,  
More monstrous standing by : whereof I reckon  
The casting forth to crows thy baby-daughter  
To be, or none, or little ; tho' a devil  
Would have shed water out of fire ere don't :  
Nor is't directly laid to thee, the death  
Of the young prince ; whose honourable thoughts  
(Thoughts high for one so tender) cleft the heart  
That could conceive a gross and foolish fire  
Blemish'd his gracious dam : this is not, no.  
Laid to thy answer. But the last—O lords,  
When I have said, cry woe ! the queen, the queen,  
The sweetest, dearest, creature's dead ; and vengeance for't  
Not drop down yet.

*Lord.* The higher powers forbid !

*Paul.* I say she's dead ; I'll swear't : if word nor oath  
Prevail not, go and see : if you can bring  
Tincture or lustre in her lip or eye,  
Heat outwardly, or breath within, I'll serve you  
As I would do the gods. But, O thou tyrant !  
Do not repent these things ; for they are heavier  
Than all thy woes can stir : therefore betake thee  
To nothing but despair. A thousand knees  
Ten thousand years together naked, fasting  
Upon a barren mountain, and still winter  
In storm perpetual, could not move the gods  
To look that way thou wert.

*Leo.* Go on, go on ;

'Thou canst not speak too much : I have deserv'd  
All tongues to talk their bitterest.

*Lord.* Say no more ;

Howe'er the business goes you have made fault  
I'the boldness of your speech:

*Paul.* I am sorry for't :

All faults I make when I shall come to know them  
I do repent. Alas ! I have shew'd too much  
The rashness of a woman : he is touch'd  
To the noble heart.—What's gone ; and what's past helps  
Should be past grief. Do not receive affliction  
At my petition, I beseech you ; rather  
Let me be punish'd that have minded you  
Of what you should forget. Now, good my liege,  
Sir, royal sir, forgive a foolish woman ;  
The love I bore your queen—lo, fool again !  
I'll speak of her no more, nor of your children ;  
I'll not remember you of my own lord,  
Who is lost too. Take your patience to you  
And I'll say nothing.

*Leo.* Thou didst speak but well  
When most the truth ; which I receive much better  
Than to be pitied of thee. Prithee bring me  
To the dead bodies of my queen and son ;  
One grave shall be for both. Upon them shall  
The causes of their death appear unto  
Our shame perpetual. Once a day I'll visit  
The chapel where they lie, and tears shed there  
Shall be my recreation. So long as nature  
Will bear up with this exercise,  
So long I daily vow to use it. Come.  
And lead me to these sorrows.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*Bohemia. A desert Country near the Seas*

*Enter ANTIGONUS with a Child, and a Mariner.*

*Ant.* Thou art perfect then our ship hath touch'd upon  
The deserts of Bohemia ?

*Mar.* Ay, my lord ; and fear  
We have landed in an ill time ; the skies look grimly,  
And threaten present blusters. In my conscience  
The heavens with that we have in hand are angry,  
And frown upon us.

*Ant.* Their sacred wills be done ! Go, get aboard ;  
Look to thy bark : I'll not be long before  
I call upon thee.

*Mar.* Make your best haste, and go not  
Too far i'the land : 'tis like to be loud weather :  
Besides, this place is famous for the creatures  
Of prey that keep upon't.

*Ant.* Go thou away ;  
I'll follow instantly.

*Mar.* I am glad at heart to be so rid o'the business. [*Exit.*]

*Ant.* Come, poor babe, I have heard  
But not believ'd the spirits of the dead  
May walk again : if such thing be thy mother  
Appear'd to me last night ; for ne'er was dream  
So like a waking. To me comes a creature,  
Sometimes her head on one side, some another,  
I never saw a vessel of like sorrow  
So fill'd and so becoming : in pure white robes  
Like very sanctity she did approach  
My cabin where I lay : thrice bow'd before me,  
And, gasping to begin some speech, her eyes  
Became two spouts : the fury spent, anon  
Did this break from her : " Good Antigonus,  
" Since fate against thy better disposition  
" Hath made thy person for the thrower-out  
" Of my poor babe according to thine oath,  
" Places remote enough are in Bohemia,  
" There weep, and leave it crying ; and, for the babe  
" Is counted lost for ever, Perdita,  
" I prithee call't. For this ungentle business,  
" Put on thee by my lord, thou ne'er shalt see  
" Thy wife Paulina more." And so with shrieks  
She melted into air. Affrighted much,  
I did in time collect myself, and thought  
This was so, and no slumber. Dreams are toys ;  
Yet for this once, yea, superstitiously  
I will be squar'd by this. I do believe  
Hermione hath suffer'd death, and that  
Apollo would, this being indeed the issue  
Of king Polixenes, it should here be laid,  
Either for life or death, upon the earth  
Of its right father. Blossom, speed thee well !

[*Laying down the Child*  
There lie ; and there thy character ; there these ;

[*Laying down a Bundle.*  
Which may, if fortune please, both breed thee, pretty one,  
And still rest thine.—The storm begins ;—Poor wretch,  
That for thy mother's fault art thus expos'd  
To loss, and what may follow !—Weep I cannot,



But my heart bleeds: and most accurs'd am I  
 To be by oath enjoind to this.—Farewell!  
 The day frowns more and more; thou art like to have  
 A lullaby too rough: I never saw  
 The heavens so dim by day. A savage clamour!—  
 Well may I get aboard.—This is the chaife,  
 I am gone for ever. *[Exit, pursued by a Bear.]*

*Enter an old Shepherd.*

*Shep.* I would there were no age between ten and three and twenty, or that youth would sleep out the rest; for there is nothing in the *between* but getting wenches with child, wronging the ancientry, stealing, fighting.—Hark you now!—Would any but these boil'd brains of nine-teen, and two and twenty hunt this weather? They have scar'd away two of my best sheep, which I fear the wolf will sooner find than the master: if any where I have them 'tis by the sea-side brouzing of ivy. Good luck, an't be thy will; what have we here? *[Taking up the Child.]* Mercy on's a barne; a very pretty barne! A boy, or a child, I wonder! A pretty one, a very pretty one. Sure some 'scape; tho' I am not bookish, yet I can read waiting-gentlewoman in the 'scape. This has been some stair-work, some trunk-work, some behind-door work: they were warmer that got this than the poor thing is here. I'll take it up for pity: yet I'll tarry till my son come; he hollow'd but even now. Whoa, ho hoa!

*Enter Clown.*

*Clo.* Hillosa, loa!

*Shep.* What art so near? If thou'lt see a thing to talk on when thou art dead and rotten, come hither. What ail'st thou, man?

*Clo.* I have seen two such fights by sea and by land, but I am not to say it is the sea, for it is now the sky; betwixt the firmament and it you cannot thrust a bodkin's point.

*Shep.* Why, boy, how is it?

*Clo.* I would you did but see how it chafes, how it rages, how it takes up the shore: but that's not the point. Oh, the most piteous cry of the poor souls! sometimes to see 'em and not to see 'em; now the ship boring the moon with her main-mast, and anon swallow'd with yest and frost as you'd thrust a cork into a hog'shead. And then for the land service—To see how the bear tore out his shoulder-bone; how he cry'd to me for help, and said his name was Antigō-

nus, a nobleman. But to make an end of the ship, to see how the sea flap-dragon'd it. But first how the poor souls roar'd and the sea mock'd them; and how the poor gentleman roar'd and the bear mock'd him; both roaring louder than the sea or weather.

*Shep.* 'Name of mercy, when was this, boy?

*Clo.* Now, now; I have not wink'd since I saw these sights; the men are not yet cold under water; nor the bear half din'd upon the gentleman; he's at it now.

*Shep.* Would I had been by to have help'd the old man.

*Clo.* I would you had been by the ship side to have help'd her; there your charity would have lack'd footing. [*Aside.*

*Shep.* Heavy matters! heavy matters! but look thee here, boy. Now bless thyself; thou meet'st with things dying, I with things new-born. Here's a sight for thee, look thee. a bearing-cloth for a 'squire's child! Look thee here, take up, take up, boy; open't, so, let's see; it was told me I should be rich by the fairies. This is some changeling.—Open't; what's within, boy?

*Clo.* You're a made old man; if the sins of your youth are forgiven you you're well to live. Gold! all gold.

*Shep.* This is fairy gold, boy, and will prove so. Up with it, keep it close; home, home, the next way. We are lucky, boy; and to be so still requires nothing but secrecy, Let my sheep go. Come, good boy, the next way home.

*Clo.* Go you the next way with your findings; I'll go see if the bear be gone from the gentleman, and how much he hath eaten: they are never curst but when they are hungry. If there be any of him left I'll bury it.

*Shep.* That's a good deed. If thou may'st discern by that which is left of him what he is, fetch me to the sight of him

*Clo.* Marry, will I; and you shall help to put him i'the ground.

*Shep.* 'Tis a lucky day, boy, and we'll do good deeds on't  
[*Exeunt.*]

#### A C T IV.

*Enter TIME as Chorus*

*Time.*

**I** THAT please some, try all, both joy and terror  
Of good and bad, that make and unfold error—  
Now take upon me, in the name of Time  
To use my wings. Impute it not a crime

To me, or my swift passage, that I slide  
 O'er sixteen years and leave the growth untry'd  
 Of that wide gap ; since it is in my power  
 To o'erthrow law, and in one self-born hour  
 To plant and o'erwhelm custom. Let me pass  
 The same I am, ere ancient order was  
 Or what is now receiv'd. I witness to  
 The times that brought them in ; so shall I do  
 To the freshest things now reigning ; and make stale  
 The glistering of this present, as my tale  
 Now seems to it. Your patience this allowing,  
 I turn my glass, and give my scene such growing  
 As you had slept between. Leontes leaving  
 The effects of his fond jealousies ; so grieving  
 That he shuts up himself. Imagine me,  
 Gentle spectators, that I now may be  
 In fair Bohemia ; and remember well,  
 I mention here a son o'the king's, which Florizel  
 I now name to you ; and with speed so pace  
 To speak of Perdita now grown in grace  
 Equal with wond'ring. What of her ensues  
 I list not prophecy. But let Time's news  
 Be known when 'tis brought forth :—A shepherd's daughter,  
 And what to her adheres, which follows after,  
 Is the argument of Time : Of this allow  
 If ever you have spent time worse ere now :  
 If never, yet that Time himself doth say  
 He wishes earnestly you never may.

[Exit.]

SCENE I.—*The Court of Bohemia.**Enter POLIXENES and CAMILLO.*

*Pol.* I pray thee, good Camillo, be no more importunate ;  
 'tis a sickness denying thee any thing, a death to grant this.

*Cam.* It is fifteen years since I saw my country : though  
 I have for the most part been aired abroad, I desire to lay my  
 bones there. Besides, the penitent king, my master, hath  
 sent for me ; to whose feeling sorrows I might be some  
 allay, or I o'erween to think so, which is another spur to  
 my departure.

*Pol.* As thou lov'st me, Camillo, wipe not out the rest of  
 thy services by leaving me now. The need I have of thee

thine own goodness hath made : better not to have had thee than thus to want thee. Thou having made me businesses which none without thee can sufficiently manage, must either stay to execute them thyself or take away with thee the very services thou hast done ; which if I have not enough consider'd (as too much I cannot) to be more than thankful to thee shall be my study, and my profit therein the heaping friendships. Of that fatal country Sicilia pray thee speak no more ; whose very naming punishes me with the remembrance of that penitent, as thou call'st him, and reconciled king, my brother ; whose loss of his most precious queen and children are even now to be fresh lamented. Say to me when saw'st thou the prince Florizel my son ? Kings are no less unhappy their issue not being gracious, than they are in losing them when they have approved their virtues.

*Cam.* Sir, it is three days since I saw the prince : What his happier affairs may be are to me unknown ; but I have missingly noted, he is of late much retired from court, and is less frequent to his princely exercises than formerly he hath appeared.

*Pol.* I have consider'd so much, Camillo, and with some care, so far that I have eyes under my service which look upon his removedness ; from whom I have this intelligence, that he is seldom from the house of a most homely shepherd ; a man they say that from very nothing, and beyond the imagination of his neighbours, is grown into an unspeakable estate.

*Cam.* I have heard, sir, of such a man, who hath a daughter of most rare note ; the report of her is extended more than can be thought to begin from such a cottage.

*Pol.* That's likewise a part of my intelligence. But I fear the angle that plucks our son thither. Thou shalt accompany us to the place ; where we will, not appearing what we are, have some question with the shepherd, from whose simplicity I think it not uneasy to get the cause of my son's resort thither. Prithee be my present partner in this business, and lay aside all thoughts of Sicilia.

*Cam.* I willingly obey your command.

*Pol.* My best Camillo !—We must disguise ourselves.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*Changes to the Country.**Enter AUTOLICUS singing.*

*When daffodils begin to peer  
 With hey! the doxy over the dale,  
 Why then comes in the sweet o'the year,  
 For the red blood reigns in the winter pale,  
 The white sheet bleaching on the hedge,  
 With hey! the sweet birds, O how they sing!  
 Doth set my pugging tooth on edge:  
 For a quart of ale is a dish for a king,  
 The lark that tirra-lirra chaunts,  
 With hey! with hey! the thrush and the jay;  
 Are summer songs for me and my aunts,  
 While we lie tumbling in the hay.*

I have serv'd prince Florizel, and in my time wore three-pile! but now I am out of service.

*But shall I go mourn for that, my dear?  
 The pale moon shines by night;  
 And when I wander here and there,  
 I then do go most right.  
 If tinkers may have leave to live,  
 And bear the sow-skin budget,  
 Then my account I well may give,  
 And in the stocks avouch it.*

My traffick is sheets; when the kite builds look to lesser linen. My father nam'd me Autolicus, who being as I am, litter'd under Mercury, was likewise a snapper-up of unconsider'd trifles. With die and drab I purchas'd this caparison: and my revenue is the silly cheat. Gallows and knock are too powerful on the highway; beating and hanging are terrors to me: for the life to come I sleep out of the thoughts of it.—A prize! a prize!

*Enter Clown.*

*Clo.* Let me see—Every eleven weather tods; every tod yields pound and odd shilling: fifteen hundred shorn, what comes the wool to?

*Aut.* If the spring hold, the cock's mine— [Aside.

*Clo.* I cannot do't without compters.—Let me see, what am I to buy for our sheep-shearing feast? three pound of sugar, five pound of currants; rice—what will this sister of

mine do with rice? but my father hath made her mistress of the feast, and she lays it on. She hath made me four and twenty nosegays for the shearers; threeman-song-men all, and very good ones, but they are most of means and bases; but one puritan among them, and he sings psalms to horn-pipes. I must have saffron to colour the warden-pies, mace—dates—none, that's out of my note; nutmegs, seven; a race or two of ginger, but that I may beg; four pound of prunes, and as many raisins o' the sun.

*Aut.* Oh, that ever I was born! [*Groveling on the Ground.*]

*Clo.* I 'the name of me——

*Aut.* Oh, help me, help me! pluck but off these rags, and then, death, death?——

*Clo.* Alack, poor soul! thou hast need of more rags to lay on thee, rather than have these off.

*Aut.* Oh, sir the loathsomeness of them offends me more than the stripes I have received, which are mighty ones and millions.

*Clo.* Alas, poor man! a million of beating may come to a great matter.

*Aut.* I am robb'd, sir, and beaten; my money and apparel ta'en from me, and these detestable things put upon me.

*Clo.* What, by a horseman or a footman?

*Aut.* A footman, sweet sir, a footman.

*Clo.* Indeed! he should be a footman by the garments he hath left with thee; if this be a horseman's coat it hath seen very hot service. Lend me thy hand. I'll help thee. Come, lend me thy hand.

[*Helping him up.*]

*Aut.* Oh! good sir, tenderly, oh!

*Clo.* Alas, poor soul!

*Aut.* O, good sir, softly, good sir: I fear sir, my shoulder-blade is out.

*Clo.* How now? canst stand?

*Aut.* Softly, dear sir; good sir; softly; you ha' done me a charitable office.

*Clo.* Dost lack any money? I have a little money for thee.

*Aut.* No, good sweet sir; no, I beseech you sir. I have a kinsman not past three quarters of a mile hence, unto whom I was going; I shall there have money or any thing I want. Offer me no money, I pray you, that kills my heart.

*Clo.* What manner of fellow was he that robb'd you?

*Aut.* A fellow, sir, that I have known to go about with trol-my-dames. I knew him once a servant of the prince. I cannot tell, good sir, for which of his virtuous it was, but he was certainly whipt out of the court.

*Clo.* His vices, you would say; there's no virtue whipt out o'the court; they cherish it to make it stay there, and yet it will no more but abide.

*Aut.* Vices I would say, sir. I know this man well: he hath been since an ape-bearer; then a process-server, a bailiff; then he compass'd a motion of the prodigal son, and married a tinker's wife within a mile where my land and living lies; and having flown over many knaveish professions, he settled only in a rogue; some call him Autolycus.

*Clo.* Out upon him, prig! for my life, prig; he haunts wakes, fairs, and bear-baitings.

*Aut.* Very true, sir; he, sir, he; that's the rogue that put me into this apparel.

*Clo.* Not a more cowardly rogue in all Bohemia: if you had but look'd big, and spit at him, he'd have run,

*Aut.* I must confess to you, sir, I am no fighter; I am false at heart that way, and that he knew, I warrant him.

*Clo.* How do you now?

*Aut.* Sweet, sir, much better than I was; I can stand and walk: I will even take my leave of you and pace softly towards my kinsman's.

*Clo.* Shall I bring thee on thy way?

*Aut.* No, good-fac'd sir; no, sweet sir.

*Clo.* Then farewell; I must go to buy spices for our sheep-shearing. [Exit.]

*Aut.* Prosper you, sweet sir!—Your purse is not hot enough to purchase your spice. I'll be with you at your sheep shearing too. If I make not this cheat bring out another and the shearers prove sheep, let me be unroll'd, and my name put into the book of virtue!

*Jog on, jog on, the footpath way,  
And merrily bent the stile-a:  
A merry heart goes all the day,  
Your sud-tires in a mile-a.*

### SCENE III.—*A Shepherd's Cot.*

*Enter FLORIZEL and PERDITA.*

*Flo.* These your unusual weeds to each part of you  
Do give a life; no shepherdess, but Flora  
Peering in April's front. This your sheep-shearing  
Is as the meeting of the petty gods,  
And you the queen on't.

*Per.* Sir, my gracious lord,  
 To chide at your extremes it not becomes me ;  
 Oh pardon that I name them : your high self  
 The gracious mark o'the land, you have obscur'd  
 With a swain's wearing ; and me, poor lowly maid,  
 Most goddess-like prank'd up. But that our feasts  
 In every mess have folly and the feeders  
 Digest it with a custom ; I should blush  
 To see you so attired ; sworn, I think,  
 To shew myself a glass,

*Flo.* I bless the time  
 When my good falcon made her flight across  
 Thy father's ground.

*Per.* Now Jove afford you cause !  
 To me the difference forges dread ; your greatness  
 Hath not been us'd to fear. Even now I tremble  
 To think your father by some accident  
 Should pass this way as you did : Oh the fates !  
 How would he look to see his work so noble  
 Vilely bound up ! What would he say ? Or how  
 Should I in these my borrow'd flaunts behold  
 The sternness of his presence !

*Flo.* Apprehend  
 Nothing but jollity. The gods themselves,  
 Humbling their deities to love, have taken  
 The shapes of beasts upon them. Jupiter  
 Became a bull, and bellowed ; the green Neptune  
 A ram, and bleated ; and the fire-rob'd god,  
 Golden Apollo, a poor humble swain,  
 As I seem now. Their transformations  
 Were never for a piece of beauty rarer,  
 Nor in a way so chaste ; since my desires  
 Run not before mine honour ; nor my lusts  
 Burn hotter than my faith.

*Per.* O but, dear sir,  
 Your resolution cannot hold when 'tis  
 Oppos'd, as it must be, by the power o'the king.  
 One of these two must be necessities  
 Which then will speak, that you must change this purpose,  
 Or I my life.

*Flo.* Thou dearest Perdita,  
 With these forc'd thoughts, I prithee, darken not  
 The mirth o'the feast ; or I'll be thine, my fair,  
 Or not my father's. For I cannot be  
 Mine own, nor any thing to any, if  
 I be not thine. To this I am most constant,



Tho' destiny say *No*.—Be merry, gentle ;  
 Strangle such thoughts as these with any thing  
 That you behold the while. Your guests are coming ;  
 Lift up your countenance, as it were the day  
 Of celebration of that nuptial which  
 We two have sworn shall come.

*Per.* O lady fortune,  
 Stand you auspicious !

*Enter Shepherd, Clown, MOPSA, DORCAS, Servants ;  
 with POLIXENES and CAMILLO disguised.*

*Flo.* See, your guests approach :  
 Address yourself to entertain them sprightly,  
 And let's be red with mirth.

*Shep.* Fy, daughter ! when my old wife liv'd, upon  
 This day she was both pantler, butler, cook ;  
 Both dame and servant ; welcom'd all, serv'd all ;  
 Would sing her song, and dance her turn : now here  
 At upper end o'the table, now i'the middle ;  
 On his shoulder and his ; her face o'fire  
 With labour ; and the thing she took to quench it  
 She would to each one sip. You are retir'd  
 As if you were a feasted one, and not  
 The hostess of the meeting. Pray you bid  
 These unknown friends to us welcome ; for it is  
 A way to make us better friends more known.  
 Come, quench your blushes ; and present yourself  
 That which you are, mistress o'the feast. Come on,  
 And bid us welcome to your sheep-shearing,  
 As your good flock shall prosper.

*Per.* Sir, welcome ; *[To POL. and CAM.]*  
 It is my father's will I should take on me  
 The hostessship o'the day. You're welcome, sir !  
 Give me those flowers there, Dorcas.—Reverend sirs,  
 For you there's rosemary and rue, these keep  
 Seeming and favour all the winter long.  
 Grace and remembrance be unto you both,  
 And welcome to our shearing.

*Pol.* Shepherdess  
 (A fair one are you), well you fit our ages  
 With flowers of winter.

*Per.* Sir, the year growing ancient,  
 Not yet on summer's death, nor on the birth  
 Of trembling winter, the fairest flowers o'the season  
 Are our carnations and streak'd gilliflowers,  
 Which some call nature's bastards ; of that kind

Our rustic garden's barren ; and I care not  
To get slips of them.

*Pol.* Wherefore, gentle maiden,  
Do you neglect them ?

*Per.* For I have heard it said  
There is an art which in their piedness shares  
With great creating nature.

*Pol.* Say there be :

Yet nature is made better by no mean,  
But nature makes that mean ; so over that art  
Which you say adds to nature, is an art  
That nature makes. You see, sweet maid, we marry  
A gentler sycon to the wildest stock ;  
And make conceive a bark of baser kind  
By bud of nobler race. This is an art  
Which does mend nature, change it rather ; but  
The art itself is nature,

*Per.* So it is.

*Pol.* Then make your garden rich in gillyflowers,  
And do not call them bastards.

*Per.* I'll not put  
The dibble in the earth to set one slip of them ;  
No more than, were I painted, I would wish  
This youth should say 'twere well, and only therefore  
Desire to breed by me.—Here's flowers for you ;  
Hot lavender, mints, savoury, marjorum,  
The marigold that goes to bed with the sun,  
And with him rises, weeping. These are flowers  
Of middle summer, and I think they are given  
To men of middle age. You are very welcome.

*Cam.* I should leave grazing were I of your flock  
And only live by gazing.

*Per.* Out, alas !

You'd be so lean that blasts of January  
Would blow you through and through. Now, my fairest  
friend,

I would I had some flowers o'the spring that might  
Become your time of day ; and your's and your's,  
That wear upon your virgin-branches yet  
Your maidenheads growing. O Proserpina,  
For the flowers now that frighted thou let'st fall  
From Dis's waggon ! daffodils  
That come before the swallow dares, and take  
The winds of march with beauty : violets dim,  
But sweeter than the lids of Juno's eyes,  
Or Cytheria's breath ; pale primroses

'That die unmarried ere they can behold  
Bright Phœbus in his strength (a malady  
Most incident to maids), gold oxlips, and  
The crown imperial, lilies of all kinds,  
The fleur-de-lis being one. O, these I lack  
To make you garlands of; and, my sweet friend,  
To strow him o'er and o'er.

*Flo.* What? like a corse?

*Per.* No, like a bank for love to lie and play on;  
Not like a corse: or if—not to be buried  
But quick, and in mine arms. Come, take your flowers;  
Methinks I play as I have seen them do  
In Whitfun pastorals: sure this robe of mine  
Does change my disposition.

*Flo.* What you do  
Still betters what is done. When you speak, sweet  
I'd have you do it ever; when you sing  
I'd have you buy and sell so; so give alms;  
Pray so; and, for the ordering of your affairs,  
To sing them too. When you do dance, I wish you  
A wave o'the sea, that you might ever do  
Nothing but that: move still, still so,  
And own no other function. Each your doing,  
So singular in each particular  
Crowns what you're doing in the present deeds,  
That all your acts are queens.

*Per.* O Doricles,  
Your praises are too large: but that your youth  
And the true blood, which peeps forth fairly through it,  
Do plainly give you out an unstain'd shepherd;  
With wisdom I might fear, my Doricles  
You woo'd me the false way.

*Flo.* I think you have  
As little skill to fear as I have purpose  
To put you to't. But, come; our dance, I pray:  
Your hand, my Perdita: so turtles pair  
That never meant to part.

*Per.* I'll swear for 'em.

*Pol.* This is the prettiest low-born lass that ever  
Ran on the greenward; nothing she does or seems  
But smacks of something greater than herself,  
Too noble for this place.

*Cam.* He tells her something  
That makes her blood look out. Good sooth, she is  
The queen of curds and cream,

*Cl.* Come on, strike up.

*Dor.* Mopla must be your mistress : marry ; garlic  
To mend her kissing with.—

*Mop.* Now in good time !

*Cl.* Not a word, a word ; we stand upon our manners.  
Come, strike up.

*Here a dance of Shepherds and Shepherdesses.*

*Pol.* Pray, good shepherd, what fair swain is this  
Who dances with your daughter ?

*Shep.* They call him Doricles ; and he boasts himself  
To have a worthy feeding : but I have it  
Upon his own report, and I believe it.  
He looks like sooth ; he says he loves my daughter :  
I think so too ; for never gaz'd the moon  
Upon the water as he'll stand and read,  
As 'twere my daughter's eyes : and, to be plain,  
I think there is not half a kiss to choose  
Who loves another best.

*Pol.* She dances featly.

*Shep.* So she does any thing : though I report it,  
That should be silent. If young Doricles  
Do light upon her she shall bring him that  
Which he not dreams of.

*Enter a Servant*

*Ser.* O, master ! if you did but hear the pedlar at the door  
you would never dance again after a tabor and pipe : no, the  
bagpipe could not move you ; he sings several tunes faster than  
you'll tell money ; he utters them as if he had eaten ballads,  
and all men's ears grew to his tunes.

*Cl.* He could never come better ; he shall come in : I love  
a ballad but even too well, if it be a doleful matter merrily  
set down, or a very peasant thing indeed, and sung la-  
mentably.

*Ser.* He hath songs for men or women of all sizes ; no  
milliner can so fit his customers with gloves ; he has the  
prettiest love-songs for maids : so, without bawdry (which is  
strange), with such delicate burdens of *dil-do's* and *fadings* :  
*jump her and thump her* : and where some stretch-mouth'd  
rascal would, as it were, mean mischief, and break a foul gap  
into the matter, he makes the maid to answer, *Whoop, do me  
no harm, good man* ; puts him off, flights him with *Whoop, do  
me no harm, good man*.

*Pol.* This is a brave fellow.

*Clo.* Believe me thou talkest of an admirable conceited fellow. Has he any unbraided wares?

*Ser.* He hath ribbons of all the colours i'the rainbow; points more than all the lawyers in Bohemia can learnedly handle, though they come to him by the gross; inkles, cad-disses, cambrics, lawns: why, he sings them over as they were gods and goddesses: you would think a smock were a she-angel, he so chaunts to the sleeve-band and the work about the square on't.

*Clo.* Prithee bring him in, and let him approach singing.

*Per.* Forewarn him that he use no scurrilous words in his tunes.

*Clo.* You have of the pedlars that have more in 'em than you'd think, sifter.

*Per.* Ay, good brother; or go about to think.

*Enter AUTOLICUS singing.*

*Lawn as white as driven snow,  
Cyprus black as e'er was crow;  
Gloves as sweet as damask roses,  
Masks for faces and for noses;  
Bugle bracelets, necklace amber,  
Perfume for a lady's chamber;  
Golden quoifs and stomachers  
For my lads to give their dears;  
Pins and poking-sticks of steel,  
What maids lack from head to heel;  
Come buy of me, come; come buy, come buy,  
Buy lads, or else your lasses cry:  
Come buy, &c.*

*Clo.* If I were not in love with Mopsa thou should'st take no money of me; but being enthrall'd as I am, it will also be the bondage of certain ribbons and gloves.

*Mop.* I was promis'd them against the feast, but they come not too late now.

*Dor.* He hath promis'd you more than that, or there be liars.

*Mop.* He hath paid you all he promis'd you; 'may be he has paid you more, which will shame you to give him again.

*Clo.* Is there no manners left among maids? will they wear their plackets where they should wear their faces? Is there not milking-time, when you are going to bed, or kill-hole, to whistle off these secrets; but you must be tittle-

tattling before all our guests? 'Tis well they are whispering. Clamour your tongues, and not a word more.

*Mop.* I have done. Come, you promis'd me a tawdry lace and a pair of sweet gloves.

*Clo.* Have I not told thee how I was cozen'd by the way, and lost all my money?

*Aut.* And indeed, sir, there are cozeners abroad; therefore it behoves men to be wary.

*Clo.* Fear not thou, man; thou shalt lose nothing here.

*Aut.* I hope so sir; for I have about me many parcels of charge.

*Clo.* What hast here, ballads?

*Mop.* Pray now buy some; I love a ballad in print, or a life; for then we are sure they are true.

*Aut.* Here's one to a very doleful tune, how an usurer's wife was brought to-bed with twenty money-bags at a burden, and how she long'd to eat adders' heads and toads carbonado'd.

*Mop.* Is it true, think you?

*Aut.* Very true, and but a month old.

*Dor.* Bless me from marrying an usurer.

*Aut.* Here the midwife's name to it, one mistress Tale-porter, and five or six honest wives that were present. Why should I carry lies abroad?

*Mop.* Pray you now, buy it.

*Clo.* Come on, lay it by; and let's first see more ballads; we'll buy the other things anon.

*Aut.* Here's another ballad of a fish that appeared upon the coast on Wednesday the fourscore of April, forty thousand fathoms above water, and sung this ballad against the hard hearts of maids: it was thought she was a woman, and was turn'd into a cold fish, for she would not exchange flesh with one that lov'd her. The ballad is very pitiful, and as true.

*Dor.* Is it too true, think you?

*Aut.* Five justices' hands at it, and witnesses more than my pack will hold.

*Clo.* Lay it by too: Another.—

*Aut.* This is a merry ballad, but a very pretty one.

*Mop.* Let's have some merry ones.

*Aut.* Why, this is a passing merry one, and goes to the tune of *Two maids wooing a man*: there's scarce a maid westward but she sings it; 'tis in request, I can tell you.

*Mop.* We can both sing it; if thou wilt bear a part thou shalt hear; 'tis in three parts.

*Dor.* We had the tune on't a month ago.

*Aut.* I can bear my part; you must know 'tis my occupation: have at it with you.

## S O N G.

*A.* Get you hence, for I must go  
Where it fits not you to know.

*D.* Whither? *M.* O whither? *D.* Whither?  
*M.* It becomes thy oath full well,  
Thou to me thy secrets tell.

*D.* Me too, let me go thither.

*M.* Or thou go'st to the grange or mill;

*D.* If to either thou do'st ill.

*A.* Neither. *D.* What neither? *A.* Neither.

*D.* Thou hast sworn my love to be.

*M.* Thou hast sworn it more to me;  
Then, whither go'st? say, whither?

*Cl.* We'll have this song out anon by ourselves my father and the gentleman are in sad talk, and we'll not trouble them: come, bring away the pack after me. Wenches, I'll buy for you both. Pedlar, let's have the first choice. Follow me girls.

*Aut.* And you shall pay well for 'em.

[*Aside.*

*Will you buy any tape,  
Or lace for your cape,  
My dainty duck, my dear-a?  
And silk and thread,  
And toys for your head  
Of the new'st and fin'st, fin'st wear-a?  
Come to the pedlar,  
Money's a medlar,  
That doth utter all men's wear-a.*

[*Exit Clown, AUTOLICUS, DORCAS and MOPSA.*

*Enter a Servant:*

*Ser.* Master, there are three carters, the shepherds, three neat-herds, and three swine-herds, that have made themselves all men of hair; they call themselves saltiers; and they have a dance, which the wenches say is a gallimaufry of gambos, because hey are not in't; but they themselves

are o'the mind, if it be not too rough for some that know little but bowling, it will please plentifully.

*Shep.* Away! we'll have none on't; here has been too much homely foolery already. I know, sir, we weary you.

*Pol.* You weary those that refresh us. Pray let's see these four-threes of herdsmen.

*Ser.* One three of them, by their own report, sir; hath danc'd before the king; and not the worst of the three but jumps twelve foot and a half by the square.

*Shep.* Leave your prating; since these good men are pleas'd let them come in; but quickly now.

*Ser.* Why they stay at door, sir.

*Here a dance of Twelve Satyrs.*

*Pol.* [*Aside.*] O, father! you'll know more of that hereafter.

Is it not too far gone?—'Tis time to part them.—  
He's simple and tells much.—How now? fair shepherd?  
Your heart is full of something that doth take  
Your mind from feasting. Sooth, when I was young,  
And handed love as you do, I was wont  
To load my she with knacks; I would have ranfack'd  
The pedlar's filken treasury, and have pour'd it  
To her acceptance; you have let him go,  
And nothing marted with him. If your last  
Interpretation should abuse, and call this  
Your lack of love or bounty, you were straited  
For a reply, at least, if you make a care  
Of happy holding her.

*Flo.* Old sir, I know  
She prizes not such trifles as these are;  
The gifts she looks from me are pack'd and lock'd  
Up in my heart; which I have given already,  
But not deliver'd. O, hear me breathe my life  
Before this ancient sir, who it should seem  
Hath sometime lov'd! I take thy hand; this hand  
As soft as dove's down, and as white as it  
Or Ethiopian's tooth, or the fann'd snow  
That's bolted by the northern blast twice o'er.

*Pol.* What follows this?  
How prettily the young swain seems to wash  
The hand was fair before!—I have put you out  
But to your protestation; let me hear  
What you profess.

*Flo.* Do, and be witness to't.



*Pol.* And this my neighbour too?

*Flo.* And he and more

Than he, and men; the earth and heavens, and all:  
That were I crown'd the most imperial monarch  
Thereof most worthy; were I the fairest youth  
That ever made eye swerve; had force and knowledge  
More than was ever man's, I would not prize them  
Without her love: for her employ them all;  
Commend them and condemn them to her service,  
Or to their own perdition.

*Pol.* Fairly offer'd.

*Cam.* This shews a sound affection.

*Shep.* But, my daughter,  
Say you the like to him?

*Per.* I cannot speak

So well, nothing so well; no, nor mean better.  
By the pattern of my own thoughts I cut out  
The purity of his:

*Shep.* Take hands, a bargain;—

And, friends unknown, you shall bear witness to't;  
I give my daughter to him, and will make  
Her portion equal his.

*Flo.* O, that must be

I'the virtue of your daughter: one dead  
I shall have more than you can dream of yet;  
Enough then for your wonder. But come on;  
Contract us 'fore these witnesses.

*Shep.* Come, your hand;

And daughter, your's.

*Pol.* Soft, swain, awhile; 'beseech you,  
Have you a father?

*Flo.* I have; but what of him?

*Pol.* Knows he of this?

*Flo.* He neither does nor shall.

*Pol.* Methinks a father

Is at the nuptial of his son a guest  
That best becomes the table: pray you, once more,  
Is not your father grown incapable  
Of reasonable affairs? is he not stupid  
With age and altering rheums? Can he speak? hear?  
Know man from man? dispute his own estate?  
Lies he not bed-ridden? and, again, does nothing  
But what he did being childish?

*Flo.* No, good sir;

He has his health and ampler strength, indeed,  
Than must have of his age.

*Pol.* By my white beard  
 You offer him, if be so, a wrong  
 Something unfilial : Reason, my son,  
 Should choose himself a wife ; but as good reason,  
 The father (all whose joy is nothing else  
 But fair posterity) should hold some counsel  
 In such a business.

*Flo.* I yield all this ;  
 But, for some other reasons, my grave sir,  
 Which 'tis not fit you know, I not acquaint  
 My father of this business.

*Pol.* Let him know't.

*Flo.* He shall not.

*Pol.* Prithee let him.

*Flo.* No ; he must not.

*Shep.* Let him, my son ; he shall not need grieve  
 At knowing of thy choice.

*Flo.* Come, come, he must not ;  
 Mark our contract.

*Pol.* Mark your divorce, young sir, [*Discovering himself.*  
 Whom son I dare not call ; thou art too base  
 To be acknowledg'd. Thou a sceptre's heir  
 That thus affect'st a sheephock ! Thou old traitor !  
 I am sorry that by hanging thee I can but  
 Shortten thy life one week. And thou, fresh piece  
 Of excellent witchcraft, who of force must know  
 The royal fool thou cop'st with——

*Shep.* O, my heart !

*Pol.* I'll have thy beauty scratch'd with briars and made  
 More homely than thy state. For thee, fond boy,  
 If I may ever knew thou dost but sigh,  
 That thou no more shalt never see this knack (as never  
 I mean thou shalt), we'll bar thee from succession ;  
 Not hold thee our blood, no, not our kin  
 Far than Deucalian off. Mark thou my words.  
 Follow us to the court. Thou churl, for this time,  
 Tho' full of our displeasure, yet we free thee  
 From the dead blow of it. And you, enchantment,  
 Worthy enough a herdsman ; yea him too  
 That makes himself, but for our honour therein,  
 Unworthy thee ; if ever henceforth thou  
 These rural latches to his entrance open,  
 Or hoop his body more with thy embraces,  
 I will devise a death as cruel for thee  
 As thou art tender to it.

*Per.* Even here undone

[*Exit.*

I was not much affear'd ; for once or twice  
 I was about to speak, and tell him plainly  
 The self-same sun that shines upon his court  
 Hides not his visage from our cottage, but  
 Looks on alike. Wilt please you, sir, be gone ?

[To FLORIZEL.]

I told you what would come of this. 'Beseech you  
 Of your own state take care—this dream of mine—  
 Being now awake I'll queen it no inch farther,  
 But milk my ewes and weep.

*Cam.* Why, how now, father ?  
 Speak, ere thou die'st.

*Shep.* I cannot speak, nor think,  
 Nor dare to know that which I know. O, sir,

[To FLORIZEL.]

You have undone a man of fourscore three  
 That thought to fill his grave in quiet ; yea,  
 To die upon the bed my father dy'd,  
 To lie close by his honest bones ; but now  
 Some hangman must put on my shroud, and lay me  
 Where no priest shovels in dust.—O cursed wretch !

[To PERDITA.]

That knew'st this was the prince, and would'st adventure  
 To mingle faith with him. Undone ! undone !  
 If I might die within this hour I have liv'd  
 To die when I desire.

[Exit.]

*Flo.* Why look you so upon me ?  
 I am but sorry, not affear'd ; delay'd,  
 But nothing alter'd ; what I was I am ;  
 More straining on for Pucking back, not following  
 My leash unwillingly.

*Cam.* Gracious my lord,  
 You know your father's temper ; at this time  
 He will allow no speech (which I do guess  
 You do not purpose to him), and as hardly  
 Will he endure your sight as yet I fear ;  
 Then, till the fury of his highness settle,  
 Come not before him.

*Flo.* I not purpose it.  
 I think, Camillo——

*Cam.* Even he, my lord.

*Per.* How often have I told you 'twould be thus !  
 How often said my dignity would last  
 But till 'twere known !

*Flo.* It cannot fail but by  
 The violation of my faith, and then

Let Nature crush the sides o' the earth together,  
And mar the seeds within !—Lift up thy looks—  
From my succession wipe me, father ! I  
Am heir to my affection.

*Cam.* Be advis'd.

*Flo.* I am, and by my fancy ; if my reason  
Will thereto be obedient I have reason ;  
If not, my senses better pleas'd with madness,  
Do bid it welcome.

*Cam.* This is desperate, Sir.

*Flo.* So call it ; but it does fulfil my vow ;  
I needs must think it honesty. Camillo,  
Not for Bohemia nor the pomp that may  
Be thereat glean'd ; for all the sun sees, or  
The close earth wombs, or the profound seas hide  
In unknown fathoms, will I break my oath  
To this my fair belov'd ; therefore, I pray you,  
As you have ever been my father's friend,  
When he shall miss me (as in faith I mean not  
To see him any more), cast your good counsels  
Upon his passion ; let myself and fortune  
Tug for time to come. This you may know,  
And so deliver, I am put to sea  
With her whom her I cannot hold on shore ;  
And, most opportune to our need, I have  
A vessel rides fast by, but not prepar'd  
For this design. What course I mean to hold  
Shall nothing benefit your knowledge, nor  
Concern me the reporting.

*Cam.* O, my lord !

I would your spirit were easier for advice,  
Or stronger for your need.

*Flo.* Hark, Perdita—

I'll hear you by and by.

[To CAMILLO.]

*Cam.* [*Aside.*] He's irremoveable,  
Resolv'd for flight : Now were I happy if  
His going I could frame to serve my turn ;  
Save him from danger, do him love and honour ;  
Purchase the sight again of dear Sicilia  
And that unhappy king, my master, whom  
I so much thirst to see.

*Flo.* Now, good Camillo—

I am fraught with curious business, that  
I leave out ceremony.

*Cam.* Sir, I think

You have heard of my poor services, I'll love  
That I have born your father ?

*Flo.* Very noble  
Have you deserv'd : it is my father's music  
To speak your deeds ; not little of his care  
To have them recompens'd as thought on.

*CaB.* Well, my lord,  
If you may please to think I love the king ;  
And, through him, what is nearest to him, which is  
Your gracious self, embrace but my direction :  
(If your more panderous and settled project  
May suffer alteration) on mine honour,  
I'll point you where you shall have such receiving  
As shall become your highness : where you may  
Enjoy your mistress ; from the whom I see  
There's no disjunction to be made, but by  
(As heavens forefend !) your ruin. Marry her ;  
And with my best endeavours in your absence,  
Your discontenting father I will strive  
To qualify, and bring him up to liking,

*Flo.* How, Camillo,  
May this, almost a miracle be done ?  
That I may call thee something more than man,  
And after that trust to thee.

*Cam.* Have you thought on  
A place whereto you'll go ?

*Flo.* Not any yet :  
But as the unthought accident is guilty  
To what we wildly do, so we profess  
Ourselves the slaves of chance, and flies  
Of every wind that blows.

*Cam.* Then list to me.  
This follows. If you will not change your purpose  
But undergo this flight ! make for Sicilia ;  
And there present yourself, and your fair princess  
(For so I see she must be), 'fore Leontes.  
She shall be habited as it becomes  
The partner of your bed. Methinks I see  
Leontes opening his free arms and weeping  
His welcome forth : asks thee, the son, forgiveness,  
As 'twere i'the father's person : kisses the hands  
Of your fresh princess : o'er and o'er divides him,  
'Twixt his unkindness, and his kindness ; the one  
He chides to hell, and bids the other grow  
Faster than thought or time.

*Flo.* Worthy Camillo,  
What colour for my visitation shall I  
Hold up before him ?

*Cam.* Sent by the king your father  
To greet him, and to give him comforts. Sir,  
The manner of your bearing towards him, with  
What you, as from your father, shall deliver,  
Things known betwixt us three, I'll write you down :  
The which shall point you forth at every sitting  
What you must say ; that he shall not perceive  
But that you have your father's bosom there,  
And speak his very heart.

*Flo.* I am bound to you :  
There is some sap in this.

*Cam.* A course more promising  
Than a wild dedication of yourselves  
To unpath'd waters, undream'd shores ; most certain  
To miseries enough : no hope to help you ;  
But, as you shake off one, to take another ;  
Nothing so certain as your anchors ; who  
Do their best office, if they can but stay you  
Where you'll be loth to be. Besides, you know,  
Prosperity's the very bond of love ;  
Whose fresh complexion and whose heart together  
Affliction alters.

*Per.* One of these is true :  
I think affliction may subdue the cheek,  
But not take in the mind.

*Cam.* Yea, say you so ?  
There shall not, at your father's house, these seven years,  
Be born another such.

*Flo.* My good Camillo,  
She is as forward of her breeding as  
She is i'the rear of birth.

*Cam.* I cannot say 'tis pity  
She lacks instructions ; for she seems a mistress  
To most that teach.

*Per.* Your pardon, sir, for this :  
I'll blush you thanks.

*Flo.* My prettiest Perdita.—  
But, oh, the thorns we stand upon ! Camillo,  
Preserver of my father, now of me ;  
The medicine of our house ! how shall we do ?  
We are not furnish'd like Bohemia's son ;  
Nor shall appear in Sicily—

*Cam.* My lord,  
Fear none of this : I think you know my fortunes  
Do all lie there : it shall be so my care  
To have you royally appointed, as if

The scene, you play, were mine. For instance, fir,  
That you may know you shall not want; one word—

[*They talk aside.*]

*Enter* AUTOLICUS.

*Aut.* Ha, ha! what a fool Honesty is! and Trust, his sworn brother, a very simple gentleman! I have sold all my trumpery; not a counterfeit stone, not a ribbon, glass pomander, brooch, table-book, ballad, knife, tape, glove shoe-tie, bracelet, horn-ring, to keep my pack from fasting: they throng who should buy first; as if my trinkets had been, hallowed, and brought a benediction to the buyer: by which means I saw whose purse was best in picture; and, what I saw, to my good use I remember'd. My Clown (who wants but something to be a reasonable man) grew so in love with the wenches' song, that he would not stir his pettitoes till he had both tune and words; which so drew the rest of the head to me, that all their other senses stuck in ears: you might have pinch'd a placket, it was senseless; 'twas nothing to geld a codpiece of a purse; I would have filed keys off that hung in chains: no hearing, no feeling, but my fir's song, and admiring the nothing of it. So that, in this of lethargy, I pick'd and cut most of their festival purses: and had not the old man come in with a whoo-bub against his daughter and the king's son, and scar'd my choughs from the chaff, had not left a purse alive in the whole army.

[*CAM. FLO. and PER. come forward.*]

*Cam.* Nay, but my letters by this means being there,  
So soon as you arrive, shall clear that doubt.

*Flo.* And those that you'll procure from king Leontes—

*Cam.* Shall satisfy your father.

*Per.* Happy be you;

All that you speak shews fair.

*Cam.* Who have we here?

[*Seeing* AUTOLICUS,

We'll make an instrument of this; omit

Nothing may give us aid.

*Aut.* If they have overheard me now—why hanging.

*Cam.* How now, good fellow, why shak'st thou so?

Fear not, man; here's no harm intended to thee.

*Aut.* I am a poor fellow, fir.

*Cam.* Why, be so still; here's nobody will steal that from thee; yet for the outside will of thy poverty we must make an exchange: therefore, discase thee instantly, thou must think there's necessity in't, and change garments with this gentleman: Though the pennyworth, on his side be the worst, yet hold thee, there's some boot.

*Aut.* I am a poor fellow, sir:—I know ye well enough  
[*Aside.*]

*Cam.* Nay, prithee, dispatch: the gentleman is half fled already.

*Aut.* Are you in earnest, sir?—I smell the trick of it.—  
[*Aside.*]

*Flo.* Dispatch, I prithee.

*Aut.* Indeed, I have had earnest; but I cannot with conscience take it.

*Cam.* Unbuckle, unbuckle.

Fortunate mistress—let my prophecy  
Come home to you!—you must retire yourself  
Into some covert: take your sweetheart's hat  
And pluck it o'er your brows; muffle your face;  
Dismantle you; and as you can, disliking  
The truth of you own seeming; that you may,  
For I do fear eyes over you, to ship-board  
Get undescry'd.

*Per.* I see the play so lies  
That I must bear a part.

*Cam.* No remedy—  
Have you done there?

*Flo.* Should I now meet my father  
He would not call me son.

*Cam.* Nay, you shall have no hat:  
Come, lady, come.—Farewell, my friend.

*Aut.* Adieu, sir.

*Flo.* O Perdita, what have we twain forgot?  
Pray you, word.

*Cam.* What I do next shall be to tell the king  
Of this escape, and whither they are bound: [*Aside.*]  
Wherein my hope is, I shall so prevail  
To force him after: in whose company  
I shall review Sicilia: for whose sight  
I have a woman's longing.

*Flo.* Fortune speed us!—  
Thus we set on, Camillo, to the sea-side.

[*Exit FLO. with PER.*]

*Cam.* The swifter speed the better. [*Exit.*]

*Aut.* I understand the business; I hear it: To have an open ear, a quick eye, and a nimble hand, is necessary for a cutpurse; a good nose is requitable also, to smell out work for the other senses. I see this is the time that the unjust man doth thrive. What an exchange had this been without boot? what a boot is here with this exchange? Sure the gods do this year connive at us, and we may do any thing



*extempore.* The prince himself is about a piece of iniquity; stealing away from his father, with his clog at his heels. If I thought it were not a piece of honesty to acquaint the king withal, I would do't: I hold it more knavery to conceal it; and therein am I constant to my profession.

*Enter Clown and Shepherd.*

Aside, aside;—here's more matter for a hot brain: Every lane's end, every shop, church, session, hanging, yields a careful man work.

*Clo.* See, see; what a man you are now! there is no other way, but to tell the king she's a changeling, and none of your flesh and blood.

*Shep.* Nay, but hear me.

*Clo.* Nay, but hear me.

*Shep.* Go to then.

*Clo.* She being none of your flesh and blood, your flesh and blood has not offended the king; and so your flesh and blood is not to be punish'd by him. Shew those things you found about her; those secret things, all but what she has with her: This being done, let the law go whistle; I warrant you.

*Shep.* I will tell the king all, every word; yea, and his son's pranks too; who, I may say, is no honest man neither to his father nor to me, to go about to make me the king's brother-in-law.

*Clo.* Indeed! brother-in-law was the farthest off you could have been to him; and then your blood had been the dearer, by I know how much an ounce.

*Aut.* Very wisely; puppies! [*Aside.*]

*Shep.* Well; let us to the king: there is that in this farthel will make him scratch his beard.

*Aut.* I know not what impediment this complaint may be to the flight of my master.

*Clo.* 'Pray heartily he be at the palace.

*Aut.* Though I am not naturally honest, I am so sometimes by chance.—Let me pocket up my pedlar's excrement.—How now, rustics? whither are you bound?

*Shep.* To the palace, an it like your worship.

*Aut.* Your affairs there?—what? with whom? the condition of that farthel? the place of your dwelling? your names? your age? of what having, breeding, and any thing that is fitting for to be known? discover.

*Clo.* We are but plain fellows, sir,

*Aut.* A lie; you are rough and hairy: Let me have no

lying; it becomes none but tradesmen, and they often give us soldiers the lie: but we pay them for it with stamped coin, not stabbing steel; therefore they do not give us the lie.

*Clo.* Your worship had like to have given us one, if you had not taken yourself with the manner.

*Shep.* Are you a courtier, an't like you, fir?

*Aut.* Whether it like me, or no, I am a courtier. See'st thou not the air of the court in these enfoldings? hath not my gait in it the measure of the court? receives not thy nose court-odour from me? reflect I not on thy baseness, court-contempt? Think'st thou, for that I insinuate or toze from thee thy business, I am therefore no courtier? I am courtier *cap-à-pe*; and one that will either push on or pluck back thy business there: whereupon I command thee to open thy affair.

*Shep.* My business, fir, is to the king.

*Aut.* What advocate hast thou to him?

*Shep.* I know not, an't like you.

*Clo.* Advocate's the court-word for a pheasant; say you have none.

*Shep.* None, fir: I have no pheasant, cock nor hen.

*Aut.* How blest'd are we, that are not simple men!

Yet nature might have made me as these are,  
Therefore I will not disdain.

*Clo.* This cannot be but a great courtier.

*Shep.* His garments are rich, but he wears them not handsomely.

*Clo.* He seems to be the more noble in being fantastical. A great man, I'll warrant; I know by the picking on's teeth.

*Aut.* The farthel there? wat's i'the farthel?

Wherefore that box?

*Shep.* Sir, there lies such secrets in this farthel and box, which none must know but the king; and which he shall know within this hour, If I may come to the speech of him.

*Aut.* Age, thou hast lost thy labour.

*Shep.* Why, fir?

*Aut.* The king is not at the palace: he is gone aboard a new ship, to purge melancholy and air himself: For if thou be'st capable of things serious, thou must know the king is full of grief.

*Shep.* So 'tis said, fir, about his son that should have married a shepherds daughter.

*Aut.* If that shepherd be not in hand-fast, let him fly; the curses he shall have, the tortures he shall feel, will break the back of man, the heart of monster.

*Clo.* Think you so, sir?

*Aut.* Not he alone shall suffer what wit can make heavy, and vengeance bitter; but those that are germane to him; tho' removed fifty times, shall all come under the hangman: which tho' it be great pity, yet it is necessary. An old sheep-whistling rogue, a ram-tender, to offer to have his daughter come into grace! some say, he shall be ston'd; but that death is too soft for him, say I. Draw our throne into a sheep-cote! all deaths are too few, the sharpest too easy.

*Clo.* Has the old man e'er a son, sir, do you hear, an't like you, sir?

*Aut.* He has a son, who shall be flay'd alive; then, 'nointed over with honey, set on the head of a wasps nest; then stand till he be three quarters and a dram: then recover'd again with aquavitz, or some other hot infusion: then, raw as he is, and in the hottest day prognostication proclaims, shall he be set against a brick wall, the sun looking with a southward eye upon him; where he is to behold him with flies blown to death. But what talk we of these traitorly rascals, whose miseries are to be smil'd at, their offences being so capital! Tell me (for you seem to be honest plain men), what you have to the king: being something gently consider'd, I'll bring you where he is aboard, tender your persons to his presence, whisper him in your behalfs; and if it be in man, besides the king to effect your suits, here is a man shall do it.

*Clo.* He seems to be of great authority: close with him, give him gold; and though authority be a stubborn bear, yet he is oft led by the nose with gold: shew the inside of your purse to the outside of his hand, and no more ado. Remember, ston'd and flay'd alive——

*Shep.* An't please you, sir, to undertake the business for us, here is that gold I have: I'll make it as much more, and leave this young man in pawn till I bring it you.

*Aut.* After I have done what I promise?

*Shep.* Ay, sir.

*Aut.* Well, give me the moiety. Are you a party in this business?

*Clo.* In some sort, sir: but though my case be a pitiful one, I hope I shall not be flay'd out of it.

*Aut.* Oh, that's the case of the shepherd's son:—Hang him, he'll be made an example.

*Clo.* Comfort, good comfort: We must to the king, and shew our strange sights: he must know, 'tis none of your daughter, nor my sister; Sir, I will give you as much as

this old man does, when the business is perform'd; and remain, as he says, your pawn till it be brought you.

*Aut.* I will trust you. Walk before toward the sea-side, go on the right hand; I will but look upon the hedge, and follow you.

*Clo.* We are blest'd in this man, as I may say, even blest'd.

*Shep.* Let's before, as he bids us: he provided to do us good. [*Exeunt Shep. and Clo.*]

*Aut.* If I had a mind to be honest, I see Fortune would not suffer me; she drops booties in my mouth. I am courted now with a double occasion; gold, and a means to do the prince my master good; which, who knows how that may turn to my back advancement: I will bring these two moles, these blind ones, aboard him: if he think it fit to shore them again, and that the complaint they have to the king concerns him nothing, let him call me rogue, for being so far officious; for I am proof against that title, and what shame else belongs to't: To him will I present them, there may be matter in it. [*Exit.*]

## A C T V.

### S C E N E I.—*Changes to Sicilia.*

*Enter LEONTES, CLEOMENES, DION, PAULINA, & Servants.*

*Cleomenes.*

SIR, you have done enough, and have perform'd  
A saint-like sorrow: no fault could you make  
Which you have not redeem'd; indeed paid down  
More penitence than done trespass. At the last,  
Do, as the heavens have done, forget your evil;  
With them, forgive yourself.

*Leo.* Whilst I remember  
Her, and her virtues, I cannot forget  
My blemishes in them; and so still think of  
The wrong I did myself: which was so much,  
That heirless it hath made my kingdom; and  
Destroy'd the sweetest companion that e'er man  
Bred his hopes out of.

*Paul.* True, too true, my lord:  
If one by one you wedded all the world,  
Or from the all that are took something good  
To make a perfect woman, she you kill'd  
Would be unparallel'd.

*Leo.* I think so. Kill'd!

She I kill'd? I did so: but thou strik'st me  
Sorely to say I did; it is as bitter  
Upon my tongue as in my thought. Now, good now,  
Say so but seldom.

*Cleo.* Not at all, good lady;  
You might have spoke a thousand things, that would  
Have done in time more benefit, and grac'd  
Your kindness better.

*Paul.* You are one of those  
Would have him wed again.

*Dion.* If you would not so,  
You pity not the state, nor the remembrance  
Of his most sovereign name; consider little  
What dangers (by his highness' fail of issue)  
May drop upon his kingdom, and devour  
Uncertain lookers-on. What were more holy  
Than to rejoice the former queen is well?  
What holier, than, for royalty's repair,  
For present comfort, and for future good,  
To bless the bed of majesty again  
With a sweet fellow to't?

*Paul.* There is none worthy  
Respecting her that's gone. Besides, the gods  
Will have fulfill'd their secret purposes:  
For has not the divine Apollo said,  
Is't not the tenour of his oracle  
That king Leontes shall not have an heir,  
Till his lost child be found? which that it shall,  
Is all as monstrous to our human reason,  
As my Antigonus to break his grave,  
And come again to me; who, on my life,  
Did perish with the infant. 'Tis your counsel.  
My lord should to the heavens be contrary;  
Oppose against their wills.—Care not for issue;

[To the King.]

The crown will find an heir. Great Alexander  
Left his to the worthiest; so his successor  
Was like to be the best.

*Leo.* Good Paulina,  
Who hast the memory of Hermione,  
I know, in honour: O, that ever I  
Had squar'd me to thy counsel! then, even now  
I might have look'd upon my queen's full eyes;  
Have taken treasure from her lips!

*Paul.* And left them  
More rich for what they yielded.

*Leo.* Thou speak'st truth.  
No more such wives ; therefore no wife : one worse,  
And better us'd, would make her faintest spirit  
Again possess her corps ; and on this stage  
(Where we offend her now) appear soul-vest,  
And begin, *Why to me ?*——

*Paul.* Had she such power,  
She had just cause.

*Leo.* She had ; and would incense me  
To murder her I married.

*Paul.* I should so,  
Were I the ghost that walk'd ; I'd bid you mark  
Here eye ; and tell me, for what dull part in't  
You chose her ; then I'd shriek, that even your ears  
Should rift to hear me ; and the words that follow'd  
Should be, *Remember mine.*

*Leo.* Stars, stars !  
And all eyes else dead coals. Fear thou no wife,  
I'll have no wife, Paulina.

*Paul.* Will you swear  
Never to marry, but by my free leave ?

*Leo.* Never, Paulina ; so be bless'd my spirit !

*Paul.* Then, good my lords, bear witness to his oath.

*Cleo.* You tempt him over-much.

*Paul.* Unless another,  
As like Hermione as is her picture,  
Affront his eye.

*Cleo.* Good madam, pray have done.

*Paul.* Yet, if my lord will marry—If you will, sir ;  
No remedy, but you will ; give me the office  
To choose you a queen : she shall not be so young  
As was your former ; but she shall be such,  
As, walk'd your first queen's ghost, it shall take joy  
To see her in your arms.

*Leo.* My true Paulina,  
We shall not marry 'till thou bid'st us.

*Paul.* That  
Shall be when your first queen's again in breath :  
Never 'till then.

*Enter a Gentleman.*

*Gent.* One that gives out himself prince Florizel,  
Son of Polixenes, with his princess (she  
The fairest I have yet beheld), desires

Access to your high presence.

*Leo.* What with him? he comes not  
Like to his father's greatness: his approach,  
So out of circumstance, and sudden, tells us  
'Tis not a visitation fram'd, but forc'd  
By need and accident. What train?

*Gent.* But few,  
And those but mean.

*Leo.* His princess, say you with him?

*Gent.* Ay; the most peerless piece of earth, I think,  
That e'er the sun shone bright on.

*Paul.* Oh Hermione,  
As every present time doth boast itself  
Above a better, gone; so must thy grave  
Give way to what's seen now. Sir, you yourself  
Have said, and writ so (but your writing now  
Is colder than that theme); *she had not been,*  
*Nor was she to be equall'd*; thus your verse  
Flow'd with her beauty once; 'tis shrewdly ebb'd,  
To say, you have seen a better.

*Gent.* Pardon, madam;  
The one I have almost forgot (your pardon);  
The other, when she has obtain'd your eye,  
Will have your tongue too. This is a creature,  
Would she begin a sect, might quench the zeal  
Of all professors else; make profelytes  
Of whom she but bid follow.

*Paul.* How? not women?

*Gent.* Women will love her, that she is a woman  
More worth than any man; men, that she is  
The rarest of all women.

*Leo.* Go, Cleomenes;  
Yourself, assisted with your honour'd friends,

*[Exit Cleomenes.]*  
Bring them to our embracement. Still 'tis strange  
He thus should steal upon us.

*Paul.* Had our prince  
(Jewel of children) seen this hour, he had pair'd  
Well with this lord; there was not full a month  
Between their births.

*Leo.* Prithee, no more; cease; thou know'st  
He dies to me again when talk'd of. Sure,  
When I shall see this gentleman, thy speeches  
Will bring me to consider that which may  
Unfurnish me of reason. They are come.—

*Enter FLORIZEL, PERDITA, CLEOMENES, and others.*

Your mother was most true to wedlock, prince;  
For she did print your royal father off,  
Conceiving you. Were I but twenty-one,  
Your father's image is so hit in you,  
His very air, that I should call you brother,  
As I did him; and speak of something wildly  
By us perform'd before. Most dearly welcome,  
As your fair princess, goddesses.—oh! alas!  
I lost a couple, that 'twixt heaven and earth  
Might thus have stood begetting wonder, as  
You, gracious couple, do! and then I lost  
(All mine own folly) the society,  
Amity too of your brave father; whom,  
Though bearing misery, I desire my life  
Once more to look on.

*Flo.* Sir, by his command  
Have I here touch'd Sicilia; and from him  
Give you all greetings that a king, a friend,  
Can send his brother: and, but infirmity  
(Which waits upon worn times) hath something seiz'd  
His wish'd ability, he had himself  
The lands and waters 'twixt your throne and his  
Measur'd, to look upon you, whom he loves  
(He bade me say so) more than all the sceptres,  
And those that bear them, living.

*Leo.* Oh, my brother!  
(Good gentleman) the wrongs I have done thee stir  
Afresh within me; and these thy offices  
So rarely kind, are as interpreters  
Of my behind-hand slackness! Welcome hither,  
As is the sprig to the earth. And hath he too  
Expos'd this paragon to the fearful usage,  
At least, ungentle, of the dreadful Neptune,  
To greet a man not worth her pains; much less  
The adventure of her person?

*Flo.* Good my lord,  
She came from Libya.

*Leo.* Where the warlike Smalus,  
That noble honour'd lord, is fear'd and lov'd?

*Flo.* Most royal sir, from thence; from him, whose  
daughter  
His tears proclaim'd his parting with her: thence  
(A prosperous south-wind friendly) we have cross'd,  
To execute the charge my father gave me,



For visiting your highness : my best train  
 I have from your Sicilian shores dismiss'd ;  
 Who for Bohemia bend, to signify  
 Not only my success in Libya, sir,  
 But my arrival and my wife's in safety  
 Here, where we are.

*Leo.* The blessed gods  
 Purge all infection from our air, whilst you  
 Do climate here ! You have a holy father,  
 A graceful gentleman ; against whose person,  
 So sacred as it is, I have done sin ;  
 For which the heavens, taking angry note,  
 Have left me issueless ; and your father's bless'd  
 (As he from heaven merits it) with you,  
 Worthy his goodness. What might I have been,  
 Might I a son and daughter now have look'd on,  
 Such goodly things as you !

*Enter a Lord.*

*Lord.* Most noble sir,  
 That which I shall report will bear no credit,  
 Where not the proof so high. Please you, great sir,  
 Bohemia greets you from himself, by me ;  
 Desires you to attach his son, who has,  
 His dignity and duty both cast off,  
 Fled from his father, from his hopes, and with  
 A shepherd's daughter.

*Leo.* Where's Bohemia ? speak !

*Lord.* Here in your city ; I now came from him.  
 I speak amazedly : and it becomes  
 My marvel, and my message. To your court  
 Whilst he was hast'ning (in the chase, it seems,  
 Of this fair couple), meets he on the way  
 The father of his seeming lady, and  
 Her brother, having both their country quitted  
 With this young prince.

*Flo.* Camillo has betray'd me ;  
 Whose honour and whose honesty, till now  
 Endur'd all weathers.

*Lord.* Lay't so to his charge ;  
 He's with the king your father.

*Leo.* Who, Camillo ?

*Lord.* Camillo, sir ; I spake with him ; who now  
 Has these poor men in question. Never saw I

Wretches so quake: they kneel, they kiss the earth;  
 Forswear themselves as often as they speak:  
 Bohemia stops his ears, and threatens them  
 With divers deaths, in death.

*Per.* Oh, my poor father!—

The heaven sets spies upon us, will not have  
 Our contract celebrated.

*Leo.* You are marry'd?

*Flo.* We are not, sir, nor are we like to be;  
 The stars, I see, will kiss the valleys first;  
 The odds for high and low's alike.

*Leo.* My lord,  
 Is this the daughter of a king?

*Flo.* She is,  
 When once she is my wife.

*Leo.* That *once*, I see, by your good father's speed,  
 Will come on very slowly. I am sorry  
 (Most sorry), you have broken from his liking,  
 Where you were ty'd in duty: and as sorry  
 Your choice is not so rich in worth as beauty,  
 That you might well enjoy her.

*Flo.* Dear, look up:  
 Though fortune, visible an enemy,  
 Should chafe us, with my father; power no jot  
 Hath she to change our loves. 'Beseech you, sir,  
 Remember, since you ow'd no more to time  
 Than I do now: with thought of such affections  
 Step forth mine advocate. At your request,  
 My father will grant precious things as trifles.

*Leo.* Would he do so, I'd beg your precious mistress,  
 Which he counts but a trifle.

*Paul.* Sir, my liege,  
 Your eye hath too much youth in't: not a month  
 'Fore your queen dy'd, she was more worth such gazes  
 Than what you look on now.

*Leo.* I thought of her  
 Even in these looks I made.—But your petition

[*To FLORIZEL.*

Is yet unanswered: I will to your father;  
 Your honour not o'erthrown by your desires,  
 I am friend to them and you; upon which errand  
 I now go toward him; therefore, follow me,  
 And mark what way I make. Come, good my lord.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*The same.**Enter AUTOLICUS, and a Gentleman.*

*Aut.* 'Beseech you, sir, were you present at this relation?

*1 Gent.* I was at the opening of the farthel, heard the old shepherd deliver the manner how he found it: whereupon, after a little amazedness, we were all commanded out of the chamber. Only this, methought I heard the shepherd say, he found the child.

*Aut.* I would most gladly know the issue of it:

*Gent.* I make a broken delivery of the business; but the changes I perceived in the king and Camillo were very notes of admiration; they seem'd almost, with staring on one another, to tear the cases of their eyes. There was speech in their dumbness, language in their very gesture; they look'd as they had heard of a world ransom'd, or one destroy'd; a notable passion of wonder appear'd in them; but the wisest beholder, that knew no more but seeing, could not say if the importance were joy or sorrow; but in the extremity of the one it must needs be.

*Enter another Gentleman.*

Here comes a gentleman that haply knows more. The news, Rogero?

*2 Gent.* Nothing but bonfires. The oracle is fulfill'd; the king's daughter is found: such a deal of wonder is broken out within this hour, that ballad-makers cannot be able to express it.

*Enter another Gentleman.*

Here comes the lady Paulina's steward; he can deliver you more. How goes it now, sir? This news, which is call'd true, is so like an old tale, that the verity of it is in strong suspicion. Has the king found his heir?

*3 Gent.* Most true; if ever truth were pregnant by circumstances. That which you hear you'll swear you see, there is such unity in the proofs. The mantle of queen Hermoine; her jewel about the neck of it; the letters of Antigonus found with it, which they know to be his character; the majesty of the creature in resemblance of the mo-

ther; the affection of nobleness, which nature shews above her breeding; and many other evidences, proclaim her, with all certainty, to be the king's daughter. Did you see the meeting of the two kings?

2 *Gent.* No.

3 *Gent.* Then have you lost a sight which was to be seen, cannot be spoken of. There might you have beheld one joy crown another; so, and in such manner, that it seem'd sorrow wept to take leave of them; for their joy waded in tears. There was casting up of eyes, holding up of hands; with countenance of such distraction, that they were to be known by garment, not by favour. Our king, being ready to leap out of himself for joy of his found daughter, as if that joy were now become a loss, cries, Oh, thy mother! thy mother! then asks Bohemia forgiveness; then embraces his son-in-law; then again worries he his daughter, with clipping her. Now he thanks the old shepherd, who stands by like a weather-beaten conduit of many kings' reigns. I never heard of such another encounter, which lames report to follow it, and undoes description to do it.

2 *Gent.* What, pray you, became of Antigonus, that carry'd hence the child

3 *Gent.* Like an old tale still, which will have matters to rehearse though credit be asleep, and not an ear open, he was torn to pieces with a bear: this avouches the shepherd's son, who has not only his innocence, which seems much to justify him, but a handkerchief and rings of his that Paulina knows.

1 *Gent.* What became of his bark and his followers?

3 *Gent.* Wreck'd the same instant of their master's death and in the view of the shepherd; so that all the instruments, which aided to expose the child, were even then lost; when it was found. But, Oh, the noble combat that, 'twixt joy and sorrow, was fought in Paulina! She had one eye declin'd for the loss of her husband; another elevated that the oracle was fulfill'd. She lifted the princess from the earth, and so locks her in embracing, as if she would pin her to her heart, that she might no more be in danger of losing.

1 *Gent.* The dignity of this act was worth the audience of kings and princes: for by such was it acted.

3 *Gent.* One of the prettiest touches of all, and that which angled for mine eyes (caught the water, though not the fish), was, when at the relation of the queen's death, with the manner how she came by it (bravely confess'd and lamented by the king), how attentiveness wounded his daughter; till, from one sign of dolour to another, she did,

with an *alas* ! I would fain say bled tears ; for I am sure my heart wept blood. Who was most marble there changed colour ; some swooned, all sorrowed : if all the world could have seen it, the woe had been universal.

1 *Gent.* Are they returned to the court ?

3 *Gent.* No : the princess, hearing of her mother's statue, which is in the keeping of Paulina, a piece many years in doing, and now newly perform'd by that rare Italian master, Julio Romano, who, had he himself eternity, and could put breath into his work, would beguile Nature of her custom, so perfectly he is her ape ; he so near to Hermione hath done Hermione, that, they say, one would speak to her, and stand in hope of answer. Thither with all greediness of affection are they gone ; and there they intend to sup.

2 *Gent.* I thought she had some great matter there in hand ; for she hath privately twice or thrice a-day, ever since the death of Hermione, visited that removed house. Shall we thither, and with our company piece the rejoicing ?

1 *Gent.* Who would be thence, that has the benefit of access ? Every wink of an eye some new grace will be born : our absence makes us unthrifty to our knowledge. Let's along, [Exeunt.

*Aut.* Now, had I not the dash of my former life in me, would preferment drop on my head. I brought the old man and his son aboard the prince ; told him, I heard them talk of a farthel, and I know not what ; but he at that time overfond of the shepherd's daughter (so he then took her to be). who began to be much sea-sick, and himself little better, extremity of weather continuing, this mystery remained undiscovered. But 'tis all one to me ; for had I been the finder out of this secret, it would not have relished among my other discredits.

*Enter Shepherd and Clown.*

Here come those I have done good to against my will, and already appearing in the blossoms of their fortune.

*Shep.* Come, boy ; I am past more children ; but thy sons and daughters will be all gentlemen born.

*Clo.* You are well met, sir : you denied to fight with me this other day, because I was no gentleman born : see you these clothes ? Say you see them not, and think me still no gentleman born. You were best say these robes are not gentleman born. Give me the lie ; do ; and try whether I am not gentleman born.

*Aut.* I know you are now, sir, a gentleman born.

*Clo.* Ay, and have been so any time these four hours.

*Shep.* And so have I, boy.

*Clo.* So you have : but I was a gentleman born before my father : for the king's son took me by the hand, and called me brother ; and then the two kings call'd my father, brother ; and then the prince my brother, and the princess my sister, call'd my father, father ; and so we wept ; and there was the first gentleman-like tears that ever we shed.

*Shep.* We may live, son, to shed many more.

*Clo.* Ay ; or else 'twere hard luck, being in so preposterous estate as we are.

*Aut.* I humbly beseech you, sir, to pardon me all the faults I have committed to your worship, and to give me your good report to the prince my master.

*Shep.* 'Prithee, son, do ; for we must be gentle now we are gentlemen.

*Clo.* Thou wilt amend thy life ?

*Aut.* Ay, an it like your good worship.

*Clo.* Give me thy hand : I will swear to the prince thou art as honest a true fellow as any in Bohemia.

*Shep.* You may say it, but not swear it.

*Clo.* Not swear it, now I am a gentleman ? Let boors and franklins say it, I'll swear it.

*Shep.* How if it be false, son ?

*Clo.* If it be ne'er so false, a true gentleman may swear it, in the behalf of his friend : And I'll swear to the prince, thou art a tall fellow of thy hands, and that thou wilt not be drunk ; but I know thou art no tall fellow of thy hands, and that thou wilt be drunk ; but I'll swear it : and I would thou would'st be a tall fellow of thy hands.

*Aut.* I will prove so, sir, to my power.

*Clo.* Ay, by any means prove a tall fellow : if I do not wonder how thou dar'st venture to be drunk, not being a tall fellow, trust me not. Hark ! the kings and the princess, our kindred, are going to see the queen's picture. Come, follow us : we'll be thy good masters. [Exit.]

### SCENE III.—*Paulina's House.*

*Enter* LEONTES, POLIXENES, FLORIZEL, PERDITA, CAMILLO, PAULINA, *Lords, and Attendants.*

*Leo.* O grave and good Paulina, the great comfort  
That I have had of thee !

*Paul.* What, sovereign sir,

I did not well, I meant well : All my services  
 You have paid home : but that you have vouchsaf'd,  
 With your crown'd brother, and these your contracted  
 Heirs of your kingdoms, my poor house to visit,  
 It is a surplus of your grace, which never  
 My life may last to answer.

*Leo.* O Paulina,  
 We honour you with trouble : But we came  
 To see the statue of our queen.—Your gallery  
 Have we pass'd through, not without much content  
 In many singularities ; but we saw not  
 That which my daughter came to look upon,  
 The statue of her mother.

*Paul.* As she liv'd peerless,  
 So her dead likeness, I do well believe,  
 Excels whatever yet you look'd upon,  
 Or hand of man hath done ; therefore I keep it  
 Lonely apart. But here it is : prepare  
 To see the life as lively mock'd, as ever  
 Still sleep mock'd death : behold, and say, 'tis well.

[*PAULINA draws a curtain, and discovers a statue.*  
 I like your silence, it the more shews off  
 Your wonder ; but yet speak :—First you, my liege,  
 Comes it not something near ?

*Leo.* Her natural posture !  
 Chide me, dear stone ; that I may say, indeed,  
 'Thou art Hermione : or rather, thou art she  
 In thy not chiding ; for she was as tender  
 As infancy and grace. But yet, Paulina,  
 Hermione was not so much wrinkled ; nothing  
 So aged, as this seems.

*Pol.* Oh, not by much.

*Paul.* So much the more our carver's excellence,  
 Which lets go by some sixteen years, and makes her  
 As she liv'd now.

*Leo.* As now she might have done  
 So much to my good comfort, as it is  
 Now piercing to my soul. Oh, thus she stood,  
 Even with such life of majesty (warm life,  
 As now it coldly stands), when first I woo'd her !  
 I am ashamed.—Does not the stone rebuke me,  
 For being more stone than it ? Oh, royal piece,  
 There's magic in thy majesty, which has  
 My evils conjur'd to remembrance, and  
 From my admiring daughter took the spirits,  
 Standing, like stone, with thee !

*Per.* And give me leave,  
And do not say, 'tis superstition, that  
I kneel, and then implore her blessing.——*Lady,*  
Dear queen, that ended when I but began,  
Give me that hand of yours, to kiss.

*Paul.* Oh, patience——  
The statue is but newly fix'd the colour's  
Not dry.

*Cam.* My lord, your sorrow was too sore laid on,  
Which sixteen winters cannot blow away,  
So many summers dry: scarce any joy  
Did ever so long live: no sorrow  
But kill'd itself much sooner.

*Pol.* Dear my brother,  
Let him that was the cause of this have power  
To take off so much grief from you, as he  
Will piece up in himself.

*Paul.* Indeed, my lord,  
If I had thought the sight of my poor image  
Would thus have wrought you (for the stone is mine)  
I'd not have shew'd it.

*Leo.* Do not draw the curtain.

*Paul.* No longer shall you gaze on't, lest your fancy  
May think anon it moves.

*Leo.* Let be, let be.  
Would I were dead, but that methinks already——  
What was he that did make it? See, my lord,  
Would you not deem it breath'd? and that those veins  
Did verily bear blood?

*Pol.* Masterly done:  
The very life seems warm upon her lip.

*Leo.* The fixure of her eye has motion in't,  
As we were mock'd with art.

*Paul.* I'll draw the curtain:  
My lord's almost so far transported, that  
He'll think anon it lives.

*Leo.* O sweet Paulina,  
Make me to think so twenty years together:  
No settled senses of the world can match  
The pleasure of that madness. Let's alone.

*Paul.* I am sorry, sir, I have thus far stirr'd you; but  
I could afflict you further.

*Leo.* Do, Paulina:  
For this affliction has a taste as sweet  
As any cordial comfort. Still, nethinks,  
There is an air comes from her. What fine chisel



Could ever yet cut breath? let no man mock me,  
For I will kiss her.

*Paul.* Good my lord, forbear:  
The ruddiness upon her lip is wet;  
You'll mar it if you kiss it; stain your own  
With oily painting. Shall I draw the curtain?

*Leo.* No, not these twenty years.

*Per.* So long could I  
Stand by, a looker on.

*Paul.* Either forbear,  
Quiet presently the chapel, or resolve you  
For more amazement; if you can behold it,  
I'll make the statute move indeed, descend  
And take you by the hand: but then you'll think,  
Which I protest against, I am assisted  
By wicked powers.

*Leo.* What you can make her do,  
I am content to look on; what to speak,  
I am content to hear; for 'tis as easy  
To make her speak as move.

*Paul.* It is requir'd,  
You do awake your faith: Then all stand still,  
Or those that think it is unlawful business  
I am about, let them depart.

*Leo.* Proceed;  
No foot shall stir.

*Paul.* Music, awake her; strike! *[Music.]*  
'Tis time; descend; be stone no more: approach,  
Strike all that look upon with marvel. Come,  
I'll fill your grave up: stir; nay, come away;  
Bequeath to death your numbness, for from him  
Dear life redeems you. You perceive she stirs;

*[HERMIONE comes down.]*

Start not; her actions shall be holy, as  
You hear my spell is lawful: do not shun her  
Until you see her die again; for then  
You kill her double. Nay, present your hand;  
When she was young, you woo'd her; now in age  
Is she become the suitor.

*Leo.* Oh, she's warm! *[Embracing her.]*  
If this be magic, let it be an art  
Lawful as eating.

*Pol.* She embraces him.

*Cam.* She hangs about his neck ;  
If she pertain to life, let her speak too.

*Pol.* Ay, and make it manifest where she has liv'd,  
Or how stol'n from the dead !

*Paul.* That she is living,  
Were it but told you, should be hooted at  
Like an old tale ; but it appears she lives,  
Though yet she speak not. Mark a little while.  
Please you to interpose, fair madam ; kneel,  
And pray your mother's blessing.—Turn, good lady,  
Our Perdita is found.

[*Presenting PERDITA, who kneels to HERMIONE.*]

*Her.* You gods, look down,  
And from your sacred vials pour your graces  
Upon mine daughter's head ! Tell me, mine own,  
Where hast thou been preserv'd ? where liv'd ? how found  
Thy father's court ? for thou shalt hear that I,  
Knowing by Paulina that the oracle  
Gave hope thou wast in being, have preserv'd  
Myself to see the issue.

*Paul.* There's time enough for that ;  
Lest they desire, upon this push, to trouble  
Your joys with like relation. Go together,  
You precious winners all ; your exultation  
Partake to every one : I, an old turtle,  
Will wing me to some wither'd bough ; and there  
My mate, that's never to be found again,  
Lament till I am lost.

*Leo.* O peace, Paulina !  
Thou shouldst a husband take by my consent,  
As I by thine a wife. This is a match,  
And made between's by vows. Thou hast found mine ;  
But, how is to be question'd ; for I saw her,  
As I thought, dead ; and have in vain said many  
A prayer upon her grave. I'll not seek far  
(For him, I partly know his mind) to find thee  
An honourable husband. Come, Camillo,  
And take her by the hand ; whose worth and honesty  
Is richly noted, and here justify'd  
By us, a pair of kings. Let's from this place.—  
What !—Look upon my brother ?—Both your pardons  
That e'er I put between your holy looks  
My ill suspicion.—This, your son-in-law,

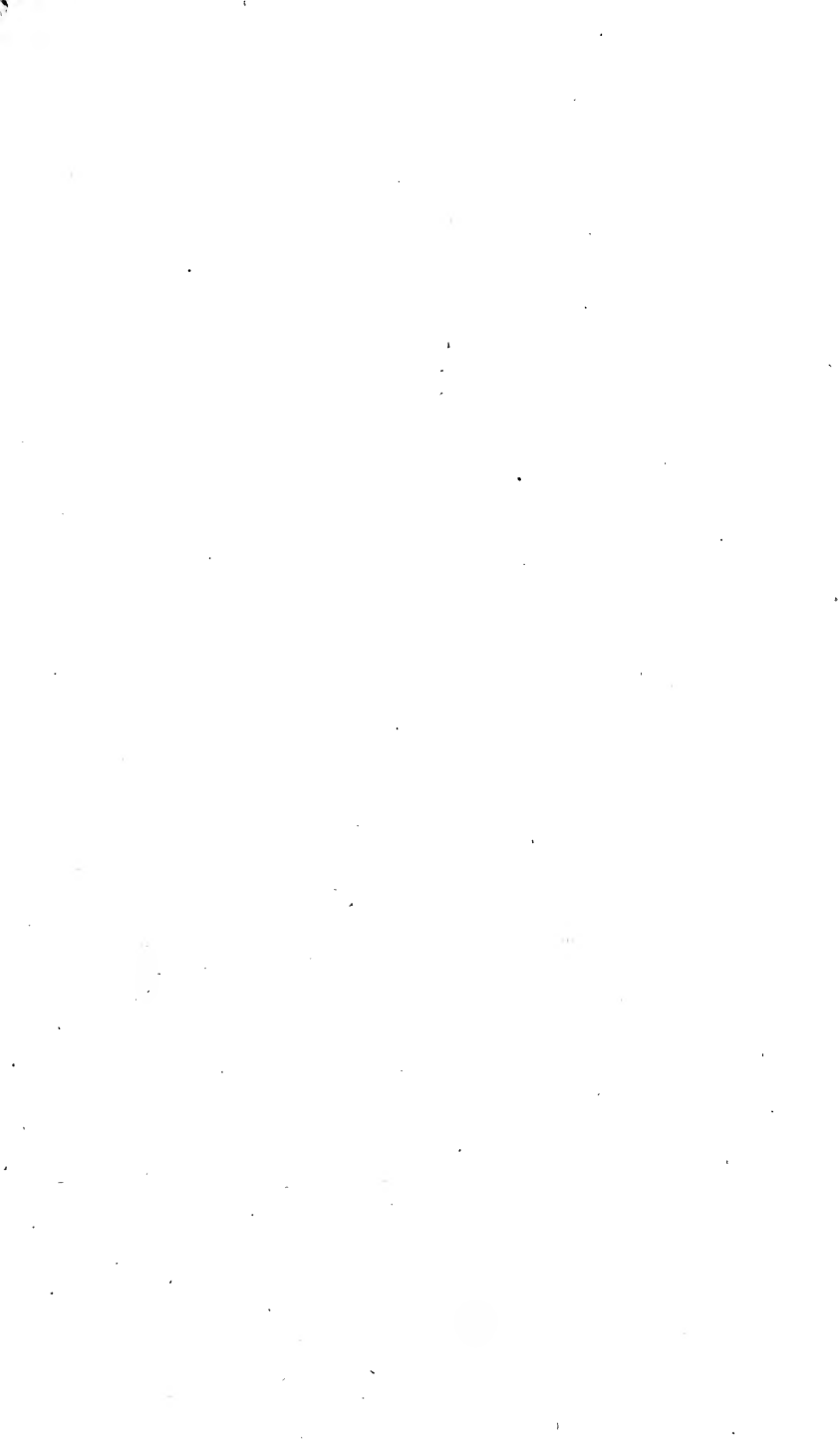
And son unto the king, who, heaven's directing,  
Is troth-plight to your daughter.—Good Paulina,  
Lead us from hence ; where we may leifurely  
Each one demand, and answer to his part  
Perform'd in this wide gap of time, fince firft  
We were diffever'd. Haftily lead away.

[*Exeunt omnes.*]

THE END.

★







Richter del.

Angus sculp.

Published as the Act directs by Bellamy & Roberts Jan<sup>r</sup> 1<sup>st</sup> 1790



Barney del.

Gayler sc.

Published as the Act License by Bellie . 95, Rochester, May 1 1790.





---

T W O   G E N T L E M E N

O F

V E R O N A.

---

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

### M E N.

*Duke of MILAN, Father to Silvia.*

VALENTINE, } *the two Gentlemen.*  
PROTHEUS, }

ANTHONIO, *Father to Protheus.*

THURIO, *a foolish Rival to Valentine.*

EGLAMOUR, *Agent for Silvia in her Escape.*  
*Host, where Julia lodges in Milan.*

*Outlaws.*

SPEED, *a Clownish Servant to Valentine.*

LAUNCE, *the like to Protheus.*

PANTHINO, *Servant to Antonio.*

### W O M E N.

JULIA, *a Lady of Verona, beloved of Protheus.*

SILVIA, *the Duke of Milan's Daughter, beloved of Valentine.*

LUCETTA, *Waiting-woman to Julia.*

*Servants, Musicians.*

SCENE, *sometimes in Verona, sometimes in Milan, and on the  
Frontiers of Mantua.*

## TWO GENTLEMEN

OF

## VERONA.

## A C T I.

SCENE I. *An open Place in Verona.**Enter VALENTINE and PROTHEUS.**Valentine.*

CEASE to persuade, my loving Protheus;  
 Home-keeping youth have ever homely wits:  
 Wer't not affection chains thy tender day  
 To the sweet glances of thy honour'd love,  
 I rather would intreat thy company,  
 To see the wonders of the world abroad,  
 Than, living dully sluggardiz'd at home,  
 Wear out thy youth with shapeless idleness.  
 But, since thou lov'st, love still, and thrive therein,  
 Even as I would, when I to love begin.

*Pro.* Wilt thou be gone? Sweet Valentine, adieu!  
 Think on thy Protheus, when thou haply seest  
 Some rare note-worthy object in thy travel;  
 With me partaker in thy happiness  
 When thou dost meet good hap; and, in thy danger,  
 If ever danger do environ thee,  
 Commend thy grievance to my holy prayers,  
 For I will be thy bead's-man, Valentine.

*Val.* And on a love-book pray for my success.

*Pro.* Upon some book I love, I'll pray for thee.

*Val.* That's on some shallow story of deep love,  
 How young Leander cross'd the Hellespont.

*Pro.* That's a deep story of a deeper love;  
 For he was more than over shoes in love.

*Val.* 'Tis true; for you are over boots in love,  
And yet you never swom the Hellepont.

*Pro.* Over the boots! nay, give me not the boots.

*Val.* No, I will not; for it boots thee not.

*Pro.* What?

*Val.* To be in love where scorn is bought with groans;  
Coy looks, with heart-fore sighs; one fading moment's  
mirth,

With twenty watchful, weary, tedious nights:

If haply won, perhaps a hapless gain;

If lost, why then a grievous labour won;

However, but a folly bought with wit,

Or else a wit by folly vanquished.

*Pro.* So, by your circumstance, you call me fool.

*Val.* So, by your circumstance, I fear, you'll prove.

*Pro.* 'Tis love you cavil at; I am not love.

*Val.* Love is your master, for he masters you;  
And he that is so yoked by a fool  
Methinks should not be chronicled for wise.

*Pro.* Yet writers say, As in the sweetest bud  
The eating canker dwells, so eating love  
Inhabits in the finest wits of all.

*Val.* And writers say, As the most forward bud  
Is eaten by the canker ere it blow,  
Even so by love the young and tender wit  
Is turn'd to folly; blasting in the bud,  
Losing his verdure even in the prime,  
And all the fair effects of future hopes.  
But wherefore waste I time to counsel thee  
That art a votary to fond desire?  
Once more adieu! My father at the road  
Expects my coming, there to see me shipp'd.

*Pro.* And thither will I bring thee, Valentine.

*Val.* Sweet Protheus, no; now let us take our leave,  
At Milan let me hear from thee by letters,  
Of thy success in love, and what news else  
Betideth here in absence of thy friend;  
And I likewise will visit thee with mine.

*Pro.* All happiness bechance to thee in Milan!

*Val.* As much to you at home; and so farewell! [*Exit.*  
*Pro.*

*Pro.* He after honour hunts, I after love ;  
 He leaves his friends to dignify them more ;  
 I leave myself, my friends, and all for love.  
 Thou, Julia, thou hast metamorphos'd me ;  
 Made me neglect my studies, lose my time,  
 War with good counsel, set the world at nought ;  
 Made wit with musing weak, heart sick with thought.

*Enter SPEED.*

*Speed.* Sir Protheus, save you ! Saw you my master ?

*Pro.* But now he parted hence to embark for Milan.

*Speed.* Twenty to one then he is shipp'd already ;  
 And I have play'd the sheep in losing him.

*Pro.* Indeed, a sheep doth very often stray,  
 An if the shepherd be a while away.

*Speed.* You conclude that my master is a shepherd then,  
 and I a sheep ?

*Pro.* I do.

*Speed.* Why then my horns are his horns, whether I  
 wake or sleep.

*Pro.* A silly answer, and fitting well a sheep.

*Speed.* This proves me still a sheep.

*Pro.* True ; and thy master a shepherd.

*Speed.* Nay, that I can deny by a circumstance.

*Pro.* It shall go hard but I'll prove it by another.

*Speed.* The shepherd seeks the sheep, and not the sheep  
 the shephèrd ; but I seek my master, and my master seeks  
 not me ; therefore I am no sheep.

*Pro.* The sheep for fodder follows the shepherd, the  
 shepherd for the food follows not the sheep ; thou for  
 wages followest thy master, thy master for wages followest  
 not thee ; therefore thou art a sheep.

*Speed.* Such another proof will make me cry baâ.

*Pro.* But dost thou hear ? gav'st thou my letter to Julia ?

*Speed.* Ay, sir ; I, a lost mutton, gave your letter to her,  
 a lac'd mutton ; and she, a lac'd mutton, gave me, a lost  
 mutton, nothing for my labour.

*Pro.* Here's too small a pasture for such a store of  
 muttons.

*Speed.* If the ground be overcharged, you were best  
 stick her.

*Pro.* Nay, in that you are a stray; 'twere best pound you.

*Speed.* Nay, fir, less than a pound shall serve me for carrying your letter.

*Pro.* You mistake; I mean the pound, a pinfold.

*Speed.* From a pound to a pin? fold it over and over, 'Tis threefold too little for carrying a letter to your lover.

*Pro.* But what said she? did she nod? [*SPEED nods.*]

*Speed.* I.

*Pro.* Nod, I? why that's noddy.

*Speed.* You mistook, fir; I said she did nod; and you ask me if she did nod; and I said I.

*Pro.* And that set together is—noddy.

*Speed.* Now you have taken the pains to set it together, take it for your pains.

*Pro.* No, no, you shall have it for bearing the letter.

*Speed.* Well, I perceive I must be fain to bear with you.

*Pro.* Why, fir, how do you bear with me?

*Speed.* Marry, fir, the letter very orderly; having nothing but the word noddy for my pains.

*Pro.* Beshrew me but you have a quick wit.

*Speed.* And yet it cannot overtake your slow purse.

*Pro.* Come, come, open the matter in brief: What said she?

*Speed.* Open your purse, that the money and the matter may be both at once deliver'd.

*Pro.* Well, fir, here is for your pains: What said she?

*Speed.* Truly, fir, I think you'll hardly win her.

*Pro.* Why? Could'st thou perceive so much from her?

*Speed.* Sir, I could perceive nothing at all from her; no, not so much as a ducket for delivering your letter; and being so hard to me that brought your mind, I fear she'll prove as hard to you in telling her mind. Give her no token but stones, for she's as hard as steel.

*Pro.* What! said she nothing?

*Speed.* No, not so much as—*take this for thy pains.* To testify your bounty, I thank you, you have testern'd me; in requital whereof henceforth carry your letters yourself; and so, fir, I'll commend you to my master.

*Pro.*

*Pro.* Go, go, be gone to save your ship from wreck,  
Which cannot perish, having thee aboard,  
Being destin'd to a drier death on shore:—  
I must go send some better messenger;  
I fear my Julia would not deign my lines,  
Receiving them from such a worthless post.

[*Exeunt severally.*]

SCENE II. *Changes to JULIA's Chamber. Enter JULIA and LUCETTA.*

*Jul.* But say, Lucetta, now we are alone,  
Would'st thou then counsel me to fall in love?

*Luc.* Ay, madam; so you stumble not unheedfully.

*Jul.* Of all the fair resort of gentlemen,  
That every day with parle encounter me,  
In thy opinion which is worthiest love?

*Jul.* Please you repeat their names, I'll shew my mind  
According to my shallow simple skill.

*Jul.* What think'st thou of the fair Sir Eglamour?

*Luc.* As of a knight well spoken, neat and fine;  
But, were I you, he never should be mine.

*Jul.* What think'st thou of the rich Mercatio?

*Luc.* Well of his wealth; but of himself, so, so.

*Jul.* What think'st thou of the gentle Protheus?

*Luc.* Lord, lord! to see what folly reigns in us!

*Jul.* How now! what means this passion at his name?

*Luc.* Pardon, dear madam; 'tis a passing shame  
That I, unworthy body as I am,  
Should censure thus on lovely gentlemen.

*Jul.* Why not on Protheus as of all the rest?

*Luc.* Then thus—of many good, I think him best.

*Jul.* Your reason?

*Luc.* I have no other but a woman's reason;  
I think him so, because I think him so.

*Jul.* And would'st thou have me cast my love on him?

*Luc.* Ay, if you thought your love not cast away.

*Jul.* Why, he of all the rest hath never mov'd me.

*Luc.* Yet he of all the rest I think best loves ye.

*Jul.* His little speaking shews his love but small.

*Luc.* Fire, that is closest kept, burns most of all.

*Jul.* They do not love that do not shew their love.

*Luc.* Oh! they love least that let men know their love.

*Jul.* I would I knew his mind.

*Luc.* Peruse this paper, madam.

*Jul.* To *Julia*—Say, from whom?

*Luc.* That the contents will shew.

*Jul.* Say, say; who gave it thee?

*Luc.* Sir Valentine's page; and sent, I think, from  
Protheus:

He would have given it you, but I, being in the way,  
Did in your name receive it; pardon the fault, I pray.

*Jul.* Now, by my modesty, a goodly broker!  
Dare you presume to harbour wanton lines?

To whisper and conspire against my youth?

Now, trust me, 'tis an office of great worth,

And you an officer fit for the place.

There, take the paper, see it be return'd;

Or else return no more into my sight.

*Luc.* To plead for love deserves more fee than hate.

*Jul.* Will ye be gone?

*Luc.* That you may ruminate.

[*Exit.*

*Jul.* And yet I would I had o'erlook'd the letter.

It were a shame to call her back again,

And pray her to a fault for which I chid her.

What fool is she, that knows I am a maid,

And would not force the letter to my view?

Since maids, in modesty, say *No* to that

Which they would have the profferer construe *Ay*.

Fie, fie! how wayward is this foolish love,

That, like a testy babe, will scratch the nurse,

And presently, all humbled, kifs the rod!

How churlishly I chid *Lucetta* hence,

When willingly I would have had her here!

How angrily I taught my brow to frown,

When inward joy enforc'd my heart to smile!

My penance is to call *Lucetta* back,

And ask remission for my folly past:—

What ho! *Lucetta*!

*Re-enter LUCETTA.*

*Luc.* What would your ladyship?

*Jul.* Is it near dinner-time?

*Luc.*



*Luc.* I would it were ;  
That you might kill your stomach on your meat,  
And not upon your maid.

*Ful.* What is't that you  
Took up so gingerly ?

*Luc.* Nothing.

*Ful.* Why didst thou stoop then ?

*Luc.* To take a paper up that I let fall.

*Ful.* And is that paper nothing ?

*Luc.* Nothing concerning me.

*Ful.* Then let it lie for those that it concerns.

*Luc.* Madam, it will not lie where it concerns,  
Unless it have a false interpreter.

*Ful.* Some love of yours hath writ to you in rhyme.

*Luc.* That I might sing it, madam, to a tune :  
Give me a note ; your ladyship can set.

*Ful.* As little by such toys as may be possible ;  
Best sing it to the tune of *Light o' love*.

*Luc.* It is too heavy for so light a tune.

*Ful.* Heavy ! belike it hath some burden then.

*Luc.* Ay ; and melodious were it, would you sing it.

*Ful.* And why not you ?

*Luc.* I cannot reach so high.

*Ful.* Let's see your song :—How now, minion ?

*Luc.* Keep tune there still, so you will sing it out :  
And yet, methinks, I do not like this tune.

*Ful.* You do not ?

*Luc.* No, madam, it is too sharp.

*Ful.* You, minion, are too faucy.

*Luc.* Nay, now you are too flat,  
And mar the concord with too harsh a descant :  
There wanteth but a mean to fill your song.

*Ful.* The mean is drown'd with your unruly base.

*Luc.* Indeed, I bid the base for Protheus.

*Ful.* This babble shall not henceforth trouble me.  
Here is a coil with protestation !—

[*Tears it.*

Go, get you gone ; and let the papers lie :  
You would be fingering them, to anger me.

*Luc.* She makes it strange ; but she would be best  
pleas'd

To be so anger'd with another letter.

[*Exit.*  
*Ful.*

*Ful.* Nay, would I were so anger'd with the same !  
 Oh hateful hands, to tear such loving words !  
 Injurious wasps, to feed on such sweet honey,  
 And kill the bees that yield it, with your stings !  
 I'll kiss each several paper for amends.  
 Look, here is writ—*kind* Julia ;—unkind Julia !  
 As in revenge of thy ingratitude,  
 I throw thy name against the bruising stones,  
 Trampling contemptuously on thy disdain.  
 Look, here is writ—*love-wounded* Protheus :—  
 Poor wounded name ! my bosom, as a bed,  
 Shall lodge thee, till thy wound be thoroughly heal'd ;  
 And thus I search it with a sovereign kiss.  
 But twice or thrice was Protheus written down :  
 Be calm, good wind, blow not a word away,  
 Till I have found each letter in the letter,  
 Except mine own name ; that some whirlwind bear  
 Unto a ragged, fearful-hanging rock,  
 And throw it thence into the raging sea !  
 Lo, here in one line is his name twice writ—  
*Poor forlorn* Protheus, *passionate* Protheus,  
*To the sweet* Julia ;—that I'll tear away ;  
 And yet I will not, sith so prettily  
 He couples it to his complaining names :  
 Thus will I fold them one upon another ;  
 Now kiss, embrace, contend, do what you will.

*Re-enter LUCETTA.*

*Luc.* Madam, dinner's ready, and your father stays.

*Ful.* Well, let us go.

*Luc.* What, shall these papers lie like tell-tales here ?

*Ful.* If thou respect them, best to take them up.

*Luc.* Nay, I was taken up for laying them down :  
 Yet here they shall not lie for catching cold.

*Ful.* I see you have a month's mind to them.

*Luc.* Ay, madam, you may say what sights you see ;  
 I see things too, although you judge I wink.

*Ful.* Come, come, will't please you go ? [*Exeunt.*

SCENE

SCENE III. ANTHONIO'S *House*.*Enter ANTHONIO and PANTHINO.*

*Ant.* Tell me, Panthino, what sad talk was that  
Wherewith my brother held you in the cloister?

*Pant.* 'Twas of his nephew Protheus, your son.

*Ant.* Why, what of him?

*Pant.* He wonder'd that your lordship  
Would suffer him to spend his youth at home;  
While other men, of slender reputation,  
Put forth their sons to seek preferment out:  
Some to the wars, to try their fortune there;  
Some, to discover islands far away;  
Some, to the studious universities.  
For any, or for all these exercises,  
He said that Protheus, your son, was meet;  
And did request me, to importune you  
To let him spend his time no more at home,  
Which would be great impeachment to his age,  
In having known no travel in his youth.

*Ant.* Nor need'st thou much importune me to that  
Whereon this month I have been hammering.  
I have consider'd well his loss of time;  
And how he cannot be a perfect man,  
Not being try'd, and tutor'd in the world:  
Experience is by industry achiev'd,  
And perfected by the swift course of time:  
Then, tell me, whither were I best to send him?

*Pant.* I think your lordship is not ignorant,  
How his companion, youthful Valentine,  
Attends the emperor in his royal court.

*Ant.* I know it well.

*Pant.* 'Twere good I think your lordship sent him  
thither:

There shall he practise tilts and tournaments,  
Hear sweet discourse, converse with noblemen;  
And be in eye of every exercise  
Worthy his youth and nobleness of birth.

*Ant.* I like thy counsel; well hast thou advis'd:  
And, that thou may'st perceive how well I like it,

The

The execution of it shall make known ;  
 Even with the speediest expedition  
 I will dispatch him to the emperor's court.

*Pant.* To-morrow, may it please you, Don Alphonso,  
 With other gentlemen of good esteem,  
 Are journeying to salute the emperor,  
 And to commend their service to his will.

*Ant.* Good company ; with them shall Protheus go :  
 And, in good time—now will we break with him.

*Enter PROTHEUS.*

*Pro.* Sweet love ! sweet lines ! sweet life !  
 Here is her hand, the agent of her heart ;  
 Here is her oath for love, her honour's pawn :  
 Oh ! that our fathers would applaud our loves,  
 To seal our happiness with their consents !  
 Oh heavenly Julia !

*Ant.* How now ? what letter are you reading there ?

*Pro.* May't please your lordship, 'tis a word or two  
 Of commendation sent from Valentine,  
 Deliver'd by a friend that came from him.

*Ant.* Lend me the letter ; let me see what news.

*Pro.* There is no news, my lord ; but that he writes,  
 How happily he lives, how well belov'd,  
 And daily graced by the emperor ;  
 Wishing me with him, partner of his fortune,

*Ant.* And how stand you affected to his wish :

*Pro.* As one relying on your lordship's will,  
 And not depending on his friendly wish.

*Ant.* My will is something fortied with his wish :  
 Muse not that I thus suddenly proceed ;  
 For what I will, I will, and there an end.  
 I am resolv'd that thou shalt spend some time  
 With Valentine in the emperor's court ;  
 What maintenance he from his friends receives,  
 Like exhibition thou shalt have from me.  
 To-morrow be in readiness to go :

Excuse it not, for I am peremptory.

*Pro.* My lord, I cannot be so soon provided ;  
 Please you, deliberate a day or two.

*Ant.* Look, what thou want'st shall be sent after thee :

No

No more of stay; to-morrow thou must go.—

Come on, Panthino; you shall be employ'd

To hasten on his expedition. [Ex. ANT. and PANT.

*Pro.* Thus have I shunn'd the fire, for fear of burning;

And drench'd me in the sea, where I am drown'd:

I fear'd to shew my father Julia's letter,

Lest he should take exceptions to my love;

And with the vantage of mine own excuse

Hath he excepted most against my love.

Oh, how this spring of love resembleth

The uncertain glory of an April day;

Which now shews all the beauty of the sun,

And by and by a cloud takes all away!

*Re-enter PANTHINO.*

*Pant.* Sir Protheus, your father calls for you;

He is in haste, therefore, I pray you, go.

*Pro.* Why, this it is! my heart accords thereto;

And yet a thousand times it answers, No. [Exeunt.

## A C T II.

### SCENE I. *Changes to Milan.*

*An Apartment in the Duke's Palace. Enter VALENTINE and SPEED.*

*Speed.*

SIR, your glove.

*Val.* Not mine; my gloves are on.

*Speed.* Why then this may be your's; for this is but one.

*Val.* Ha! let me see: ay, give it me, it's mine:—

Sweet ornament, that decks a thing divine!

Ah, Silvia! Silvia!

*Speed.* Madam Silvia! madam Silvia!

*Val.* How now, firrah?

*Speed.* She is not within hearing, fir.

*Val.* Why, fir, who bad you call her?

*Speed.* Your worship, fir, or else I mistook.

*Val.* Well, you'll still be too forward.

*Speed.* And yet I was last chidden for being too slow.

B

*Val.*

*Val.* Go to, fir; tell me, do you know madam Silvia?

*Speed.* She that your worship loves?

*Val.* Why, how know you that I am in love?

*Speed.* Marry, by these special marks: First, you have learn'd, like Sir Protheus, to wreath your arms like a male-content; to relish a love song, like a Robin-red-breast; to walk alone, like one that had the pestilence; to sigh, like a school-boy that had lost his A. B. C; to weep, like a young wench that had buried her grandam; to fast, like one that takes diet; to watch, like one that fears robbing; to speak puling, like a beggar at Hallowmas. You were wont, when you laugh'd, to crow like a cock; when you walk'd, to walk like one of the lions; when you fasted, it was presently after dinner; when you look'd sadly, it was for want of money: and now you are metamorphos'd with a mistress, that, when I look on you, I can hardly think you my master.

*Val.* Are all these things perceiv'd in me?

*Speed.* They are all perceiv'd without ye.

*Val.* Without me? they cannot.

*Speed.* Without you? nay, that's certain; for, without you were so simple, none else would: but you are so without these follies, that these follies are within you, and shine through you like the water in an urinal, that not an eye that sees you but is a physician to comment on your malady.

*Val.* But, tell me, dost thou know my lady Silvia?

*Speed.* She that you gaze on so as she sits at supper?

*Val.* Hast thou observ'd that? even she I mean.

*Speed.* Why, fir, I know her not.

*Val.* Dost thou know her by my gazing on her, and yet know'st her not?

*Speed.* Is she not hard favour'd, fir?

*Val.* Not so fair, boy, as well-favour'd.

*Speed.* Sir. I know that well enough.

*Val.* What dost thou know?

*Speed.* That she is not so fair, as (of you) well-favour'd.

*Val.* I mean that her beauty is exquisite, but her favour infinite.

*Speed.* That's because the one is painted, and the other out of all count.

*Val.*

*Val.* How painted? and how out of count?

*Speed.* Marry, fir, so painted, to make her fair, that no man counts of her beauty.

*Val.* How esteem'st thou me? I account of her beauty.

*Speed.* You never saw her since she was deform'd.

*Val.* How long hath she been deform'd?

*Speed.* Ever since you lov'd her.

*Val.* I have lov'd her ever since I saw her; and still I see her beautiful.

*Speed.* If you love her, you cannot see her.

*Val.* Why?

*Speed.* Because love is blind. O, that you had mine eyes; or your own eyes had the lights they were wont to have when you chid at Sir Protheus for going ungarter'd!

*Val.* What should I see then?

*Speed.* Your own present folly, and her passing deformity: for he, being in love, could not see to garter his hose; and you, being in love, cannot see to put on your hose.

*Val.* Belike, boy, then you are in love; for last morning you could not see to wipe my shoes.

*Speed.* True, fir; I was in love with my bed: I thank you, you swing'd me for my love, which makes me the bolder to chide you for your's.

*Val.* In conclusion, I stand affected to her.

*Speed.* I would you were set, so your affection would cease.

*Val.* Last night she enjoin'd me to write some lines to one she loves.

*Speed.* And have you?

*Val.* I have.

*Speed.* Are they not lamely writ?

*Val.* No, boy, but as well as I can do them:—  
Peace, here she comes.

*Enter SILVIA.*

*Speed.* Oh, excellent motion! Oh, exceeding puppet! now will he interpret to her.

*Val.* Madam and mistress, a thousand good-morrows.

*Speed.* Oh! 'give ye good even! here's a million of manners.

*Sil.* Sir Valentine and servant, to you two thousand.

*Speed.* He should give her interest; and she gives it him.

*Val.* As you enjoin'd me, I have writ your letter  
Unto the secret nameless friend of your's;  
Which I was much unwilling to proceed in,  
But for my duty to your ladyship.

*Sil.* I thank you, gentle servant: 'tis very clerkly done.

*Val.* Now trust me, madam, it came hardly off;  
For, being ignorant to whom it goes,  
I writ at random very doubtfully.

*Sil.* Perchance you think too much of so much pains?

*Val.* No, madam; so it stead you, I will write,  
Please you command, a thousand times as much:  
And yet—

*Sil.* A pretty period! Well, I guess the sequel;  
And yet I will not name it:—and yet I care not;—  
And yet take this again;—and yet I thank you;  
Meaning henceforth to trouble you no more.

*Speed.* And yet you will; and yet another yet. [*Aside.*]

*Val.* What means your ladyship? do you not like it?

*Sil.* Yes, yes! the lines are very quaintly writ:  
But since unwillingly, take them again;  
Nay, take them.

*Val.* Madam, they are for you.

*Sil.* Ay, ay; you writ them, sir, at my request;  
But I will none of them; they are for you:  
I would have had them writ more movingly.

*Val.* Please you, I'll write your ladyship another.

*Sil.* And when its writ, for my sake read it over:  
And, if it please you, so; if not, why, so.

*Val.* If it please me, madam? what then?

*Sil.* Why, if it please you, take it for your labour;  
And so good-morrow, servant. [*Exit.*]

*Speed.* O jest unseen, inscrutable, invisible,  
As a nose on a man's face, or a weathercock on a steeple!  
My master sues to her, and she hath taught her suitor,  
He being her pupil, to become her tutor.

O, excellent device! was there ever heard a better?  
That my master, being the scribe, to himself should write  
the letter?

*Val.*



*Val.* How now, fir? what are you reasoning with yourself?

*Speed.* Nay, I was rhiming: 'tis you that have the reason.

*Val.* To do what?

*Speed.* To be a spokesman from madam Silvia.

*Val.* To whom;

*Speed.* To yourself: why, she wooes you by a figure.

*Val.* What figure?

*Speed.* By a letter, I should say.

*Val.* Why, she hath not writ to me?

*Speed.* What need she, when she made you write to yourself? Why, do you not perceive the jest?

*Val.* No, believe me.

*Speed.* No believing you indeed, fir: But did you perceive her earnest?

*Val.* She gave me none, except an angry word.

*Speed.* Why, she hath given you a letter.

*Val.* That's the letter I writ to her friend.

*Speed.* And that letter hath she deliver'd, and there an end.

*Val.* I would it were no worse.

*Speed.* I'll warrant you 'tis as well:

*For often you have writ to her; and she in modesty,  
Or else for want of idle time, could not again reply;  
Or fearing else some messenger, that might her mind discover,  
Herself hath taught her love himself to write unto her lover.—  
All this I speak in print; for in print I found it.—*

Why muse you, fir? 'tis dinner time.

*Val.* I have din'd.

*Speed.* Ay, but hearken, fir: though theameleon love can feed on the air, I am one that am nourish'd by my victuals, and would fain have meat: oh, be not like your mistress!—be moved! be moved! [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. *JULIA's House at Verona.*

*Enter PROTHERUS and JULIA.*

*Pro.* Have patience, gentle Julia.

*Jul.* I must, where is no remedy.

*Pro.* When possibly I can, I will return.

*Jul.* If you turn not, you will return the sooner :  
Keep this remembrance for thy Julia's sake.

[*Giving a Ring.*

*Pro.* Why then we'll make exchange; here, take you this.

*Jul.* And seal the bargain with a holy kiss.

*Pro.* Here is my hand for my true constancy;  
And when that hour o'er-slips me in the day  
Wherein I sigh not, Julia, for thy sake,  
The next ensuing hour some foul mischance  
Torment me for my love's forgetfulness!  
My father stays my coming; answer not;  
That tide is now: nay, not thy tide of tears;  
The tide will stay me longer than I should: [*Exit JULIA.*  
Julia, farewell.—What! gone without a word?  
Ay, so true love should do: it cannot speak;  
For truth hath better deeds than words to grace it.

*Enter PANTHINO.*

*Pan.* Sir Protheus, you are staid for.

*Pro.* Go; I come, I come:—

Alas! this parting strikes poor lovers dumb. [*Exeunt.*

### SCENE III. *A Street.*

*Enter LAUNCE, leading a Dog.*

*Laun.* Nay, 'twill be this hour ere I have done weeping; all the kind of the Launces have this very fault: I have receiv'd my proportion, like the prodigious son, and am going with Sir Protheus to the imperial's court. I think Crab my dog be the sourest natur'd dog that lives: my mother weeping, my father wailing, my sister crying, our maid howling, our cat wringing her hands, and all our house in a great perplexity, yet did not this cruel-hearted cur shed one tear: he is a stone, a very pebble-stone, and has no more pity in him than a dog: a Jew would have wept to have seen our parting; why, my grandam having no eyes, look you, wept herself blind at my parting. Nay, I'll shew you the manner of it: This shoe is my father;—no, this left shoe is my father;—no, no, this left shoe is my mother;—nay, that cannot be so neither;—yes, it is so,

so, it is so; it hath the worser sole: this shoe, with the hole in it, is my mother, and this my father; a vengeance on't! there 'tis: now, fir, this staff is my sister; for, look you, she is as white as a lily, and as small as a wand: this hat is Nan, our maid; I am the dog:—no, the dog is himself, and I am the dog—oh, the dog is me, and I am myself; ay, so, so. Now come I to my father; *Father, your blessing*; now should not the shoe speak a word for weeping; now should I kiss my father; well, he weeps on: now come I to my mother;—oh! that she could speak now like a wood woman!—well, I kiss her;—why there 'tis; here's my mother's breath up and down: now come I to my sister; mark the moan she makes: now the dog all this while sheds not a tear, nor speaks a word; but see how I lay the dust with my tears.

*Enter PANTHINO.*

*Pan.* Launce, away, away, aboard; thy master is shipp'd, and thou art to post after with oars. What's the matter? why weep'st thou, man? Away, afs; you will lose the tide if you tarry any longer.

*Laun.* It is no matter if the ty'd were lost; for it is the unkindest ty'd that ever any man ty'd.

*Pan.* What's the unkindest tide?

*Laun.* Why, he that's ty'd here; Crab, my dog.

*Pan.* Tut, man, I mean thou'lt lose the flood; and, in losing the flood, lose thy voyage; and, in losing thy voyage, lose thy master; and, in losing thy master, lose thy service; and, in losing thy service—Why dost thou stop my mouth?

*Laun.* For fear thou should'st lose thy tongue.

*Pan.* Where should I lose my tongue?

*Laun.* In thy tale.

*Pan.* In thy tail?

*Laun.* Lose the tide, and the voyage, and the master, and the service, and the tide? Why, man, if the river were dry, I am able to fill it with my tears; if the wind were down, I could drive the boat with my sighs.

*Pan.* Come, come away man; I was sent to call thee.

*Laun.* Sir, call me what thou dar'st.

*Pan.* Wilt thou go?

*Laun.* Well, I will go.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV. *Milan. An Apartment in the Duke's Palace.**Enter VALENTINE, SILVIA, THURIO, and SPEED.**Sil.* Servant——*Val.* Mistress.*Speed.* Master, Sir Thurio frowns on you,*Val.* Ay, boy, it's for love.*Speed.* Not of you.*Val.* Of my mistress then.*Speed.* 'Twere good you knock'd him.*Sil.* Servant, you are sad.*Val.* Indeed, madam, I seem so.*Thu.* Seem you that you are not?*Val.* Haply I do.*Thu.* So do counterfeits.*Val.* So do you.*Thu.* What seem I, that I am not?*Val.* Wife.*Thu.* What instance of the contrary*Val.* Your folly.*Thu.* And how quote you my folly?*Val.* I quote it in your jerkin.*Thu.* My jerkin is a doublet.*Val.* Well, then I'll double your folly.*Thu.* How?*Sil.* What! angry, Sir Thurio: do you change colour?*Val.* Give him leave, madam; he is a kind ofameleon.*Thu.* That hath more mind to feed on your blood than live in your air.*Val.* You have said, sir.*Thu.* Ay, sir, and done too, for this time.*Val.* I know it well, sir; you always end ere you begin.*Sil.* A fine volley of words, gentlemen, and quickly shot off.*Val.* 'Tis indeed, madam; we thank the giver.*Sil.* Who is that, servant?*Val.* Yourself, sweet lady; for you gave the fire: Sir Thurio borrows his wit from your ladyship's looks, and spends what he borrows kindly in your company.*Thu.* Sir, if you spend word for word with me, I shall make your wit bankrupt.*Val.*

*Val.* I know it well, fir ; you have an exchequer of words, and, I think, no other treasure to give your followers ; for it appears by their bare liveries that they live by your bare words.

*Sil.* No more, gentlemen, no more ; here comes my father.

*Enter the Duke.*

*Duke.* Now, daughter Silvia, you are hard beset. Sir Valentine, your father's in good health : What say you to a letter from your friends Of much good news ?

*Val.* My lord, I will be thankful To any happy messenger from thence.

*Duke.* Know you Don Anthonio, your countryman ?

*Val.* Ay, my good lord, I know the gentleman To be of worth, and worthy estimation, And not without desert so well reputed.

*Duke.* Hath he not a son ?

*Val.* Ay, my good lord ; a son that well deserves The honour and regard of such a father.

*Duke.* You know him well ?

*Val.* I knew him as myself ; for from our infancy We have convers'd and spent our hours together ; And though myself have been an idle truant, Omitting the sweet benefit of time, To clothe mine age with angel-like perfection, Yet hath Sir Protheus, for that's his name, Made use and fair advantage of his days ; His years but young, but his experience old ; His head unmellow'd, but his judgment ripe ; And, in a word (for far behind his worth. Come all the praises that I now bestow), He is complete in feature and in mind, With all good grace to grace a gentleman.

*Duke.* Bestrew me, fir ; but, if he make this good, He is as worthy for an empreis' love, As meet to be an emperor's counsellor. Well, fir ; this gentleman is come to me With commendation from great potentates ; And here he means to spend his time a while : I think 'tis no unwelcome news to you.

*Val.*

*Val.* Should I have wish'd a thing, it had been he;

*Duke.* Welcome him then according to his worth;  
Silvia, I speak to you; and you, Sir Thurio:—  
For Valentine I need not 'cite him to it:

I'll send him hither to you presently. [*Exit Duke.*]

*Val.* This is the gentleman I told your ladyship  
Had come along with me, but that his mistress  
Did hold his eyes lock'd in her crystal looks.

*Sil.* Belike that now she hath enfranchis'd them  
Upon some other pawn for fealty.

*Val.* Nay, sure I think she holds them prisoners still.

*Sil.* Nay, then he should be blind; and, being blind,  
How could he see his way to seek out you?

*Val.* Why, lady, love hath twenty pair of eyes.

*Tha.* They say that love hath not an eye at all.

*Val.* To see such lovers, Thurio, as yourself;  
Upon an homely object love can wink.

*Enter PROTHEUS.*

*Sil.* Have done, have done; here comes the gentleman.

*Val.* Welcome, dear Protheus!—Mistress, I beseech  
you

Confirm his welcome with some special favour.

*Sil.* His worth is warrant for his welcome hither,  
If this be he you oft have wish'd to hear from.

*Val.* Mistress, it is: sweet lady, entertain him  
To be my fellow-servant to your ladyship.

*Sil.* Too low a mistress for so high a servant.

*Pro.* Not so, sweet lady; but too mean a servant  
To have a look of such a worthy mistress.

*Val.* Leave off discourse of disability:  
Sweet lady, entertain him for your servant.

*Pro.* My duty will I boast of, nothing else.

*Sil.* And duty never yet did want his meed:  
Servant, you are welcome to a worthless mistress.

*Pro.* I'll die on him that says so but yourself.

*Sil.* That you are welcome?

*Pro.* No; that you are worthless.

*Enter Servant.*

*Ser.* Madam, my lord, your father, would speak with you.

*Sil.*

*Sil.* I'll wait upon his pleasure. [*Exit Serv.*] Come,  
Sir Thurio,

Go with me:—Once more, new servant, welcome:  
I'll leave you to confer of home affairs;  
When you have done, we look to hear from you.

*Pro.* We'll both attend upon your ladyship.

[*Exeunt SILVIA and THURIO.*]

*Fal.* Now, tell me, how do all from whence you came?

*Pro.* Your friends are well, and have them much commended.

*Val.* And how do your's?

*Pro.* I left them all in health.

*Val.* How does your lady? and how thrives your love?

*Pro.* My tales of love were wont to weary you;  
I know you joy not in a love-discourse.

*Val.* Ay, Protheus, but that life is alter'd now;  
I have done penance for contemning love;  
Whose high imperious thoughts have punish'd me  
With bitter fasts, with penitential groans,  
With nightly tears, and daily heart-fore sighs;  
For, in revenge of my contempt of love,  
Love hath chac'd sleep from my enthralled eyes,  
And made them watchers of mine own heart's sorrow.  
O, gentle Protheus! love's a mighty lord,  
And hath so humbled me, as I confess  
There is no woe to his correction,  
Nor, to his service, no such joy on earth!  
Now no discourse except it be of love;  
Now can I break my fast, dine, sup, and sleep,  
Upon the very naked name of love.

*Pro.* Enough; I read your fortune in your eye:  
Was this the idol that you worship so?

*Val.* Even she; and is she not a heavenly saint?

*Pro.* No; but she is an earthly paragon.

*Val.* Call her divine.

*Pro.* I will not flatter her.

*Val.* O, flatter me! for love delights in praise.

*Pro.* When I was sick you gave me bitter pills;  
And I must minister the like to you.

*Val.* Then speak the truth by her; if not divine,

Yet

Yet let her be a principality,  
Sovereign to all the creatures on the earth.

*Pro.* Except my mistress.

*Val.* Sweet, except not any;  
Except thou wilt except against my love.

*Pro.* Have I not reason to prefer my own?

*Val.* And I will help thee to prefer her too;  
She shall be dignified with this high honour—  
To bear my lady's train; lest the base earth  
Should from her vesture chance to steal a kiss,  
And, of so great a favour growing proud,  
Disdain to root the summer-swalling flower,  
And make rough winter everlastingly.

*Pro.* Why, Valentine, what braggardism is this?

*Val.* Pardon me, Protheus; all I can is nothing  
To her, whose worth makes other worthies nothing;  
She is alone.

*Pro.* Then let her alone.

*Val.* Not for the world: why, man, she is mine own;  
And I as rich in having such a jewel  
As twenty seas, if all their sand were pearl,  
The water nectar, and the rocks pure gold.  
Forgive me that I do not dream on thee,  
Because thou seest me doat upon my love.  
My foolish rival, that her father likes  
Only for his possessions are so huge,  
Is gone with her along; and I must after;  
For love, thou know'st, is full of jealousy.

*Pro.* But she loves you?

*Val.* Ay, and we are betroth'd; nay more, our marriage  
hour,  
With all the cunning manner of our flight,  
Determin'd of: how I must climb her window;  
The ladder made of cords; and all the means  
Plotted and 'greed on for my happiness.  
Good Protheus, go with me to my chamber,  
In these affairs to aid me with thy counsel.

*Pro.* Go on before; I shall inquire you forth:  
I must unto the road, to disembark  
Some necessities that I needs must use;  
And then I'll presently attend you.

*Val.*



*Val.* Will you make haste?

*Pro.* I will.—

[*Exit VAL.*]

Even as one heat another heat expels,  
Or as one nail by strength drives out another,  
So the remembrance of my former love  
Is by a newer object quite forgotten.  
Is it mine eye, or Valentino's praise,  
Her true perfection, or my false transgression,  
That makes me, reasonless, to reason thus?  
She's fair; and so is Julia, that I love;—  
That I did love, for now my love is thaw'd;  
Which, like a waxen image 'gainst a fire,  
Bears no impression of the thing it was.  
Methinks my zeal to Valentine is cold,  
And that I love him not as I was wont.  
O! but I love his lady too, too much;  
And that's the reason I love him so little.  
How shall I doat on her with more advice,  
That thus without advice begin to love her?  
'Tis but her picture I have yet beheld,  
And that hath dazzled so my reason's light:  
But when I look on her perfections,  
There is no reason but I shall be blind.  
If I can check my erring love I will;  
If not, to compass her I'll use my skill.

[*Exit.*]

## SCENE V. *A Street.*

*Enter SPEED and LAUNCE.*

*Speed.* Launce! by mine honesty, welcome to Milan.

*Laun.* Forswear not thyself, sweet youth; for I am not welcome. I reckon this always—that a man is never undone till he be hang'd; nor never welcome to a place till some certain shot be paid, and the hostess say, welcome.

*Speed.* Come on, you madcap, I'll to the alehouse with you presently; where, for one shot of five pence, thou shalt have five thousand welcomes. But, firrah, how did thy master part with madam Julia?

*Laun.* Marry, after they clos'd in earnest, they parted very fairly in jest.

*Speed.*

*Speed.* But shall she marry him?

*Laun.* No.

*Speed.* How then? shall he marry her?

*Laun.* No, neither.

*Speed.* What, are they broken?

*Laun.* No, they are both as whole as a fish.

*Speed.* Why then, how stands the matter with them?

*Laun.* Marry, thus; when it stands well with him, it stands well with her.

*Speed.* What an ass art thou? I understand thee not.

*Laun.* What a block art thou that thou canst not? My staff understands me.

*Speed.* What thou say'st?

*Laun.* Ay, and what I do too: look thee, I'll but lean, and my staff understands me.

*Speed.* It stands under thee, indeed.

*Laun.* Why, stand-under and understand is all one.

*Speed.* But tell me true, will't be a match?

*Laun.* Ask my dog; if he say ay, it will; if he say no, it will; if he shake his tail, and say nothing, it will.

*Speed.* The conclusion is then, that it will.

*Laun.* Thou shalt never get such a secret from me but by a parable.

*Speed.* 'Tis well that I get it so. But, Launce, how say'st thou that thy master is become a notable lover?

*Laun.* I never knew him otherwise.

*Speed.* Than how?

*Laun.* A notable lubber, as thou reportest him to be.

*Speed.* Why, thou whoreson ass, thou mistakest me.

*Laun.* Why, fool, I meant not thee; I meant thy master.

*Speed.* I tell thee my master is become a hot lover.

*Laun.* Why, I tell thee I care not though he burn himself in love. If thou wilt go with me to the alehouse, so; if not, thou art an Hebrew, a Jew, and not worth the name of a Christian.

*Speed.* Why?

*Laun.* Because thou hast not so much charity in thee as to go to the alehouse with a Christian: wilt thou go?

*Speed.* At thy service?

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE

## S C E N E VI.

*Enter PROTHEUS.*

*Pro.* To leave my Julia, shall I be forsworn;  
 To love fair Silvia, shall I be forsworn;  
 To wrong my friend, I shall be much forsworn;  
 And even that power, which gave me first my oath,  
 Provokes me to this threefold perjury.  
 Love bade me swear, and love bids me forswear;  
 O, sweet-suggesting love! if thou hast sinn'd,  
 Teach me, thy tempted subject, to excuse it.  
 At first I did adore a twinkling star,  
 But now I worship a celestial sun.  
 Unheedful vows may heedfully be broken;  
 And he wants wit that wants resolved will  
 To learn his wit to exchange the bad for better.—  
 Fie, fie, unreverend tongue! to call her bad,  
 Whose sovereignty so oft thou hast preferr'd  
 With twenty thousand soul-confirming oaths.  
 I cannot leave to love, and yet I do;  
 But there I leave to love, where I should love.  
 Julia I lose, and Valentine I lose:  
 If I keep them, I needs must lose myself;  
 If I lose them, this find I by their loss,  
 For Valentine, myself; for Julia, Silvia.  
 I to myself am dearer than a friend;  
 For love is still more precious in itself:  
 And Silvia, witness heaven that made her fair!  
 Shews Julia but a swarthy Ethiope.  
 I will forget that Julia is alive,  
 Remembering that my love to her is dead;  
 And Valentine I'll hold an enemy,  
 Aiming at Silvia as a sweeter friend.  
 I cannot now prove constant to myself,  
 Without some treachery us'd to Valentine.—  
 'This night he meaneth with a corded ladder  
 To climb celestial Silvia's chamber window;  
 Myself in counsel his competitor:  
 Now presently I'll give her father notice  
 Of their disguising, and pretended flight;  
 Who, all enrag'd, will banish Valentine;

For Thurio, he intends, shall wed his daughter :  
 But, Valentine being gone, I'll quickly cross,  
 By some fly trick, blunt Thurio's dull proceeding.  
 Love, lend me wings to make my purpose swift,  
 As thou hast lent me wit to plot this drift ! [Exit.

SCENE VII. *JULIA's House in Verona.*

*Enter JULIA and LUCETTA.*

*Jul.* Counsel, Lucetta ; gentle girl, assist me !  
 And, even in kind love, I do conjure thee—  
 Who art the table wherein all my thoughts  
 Are visibly character'd and engrav'd—  
 To lesson me ; and tell me some good mean,  
 How, with my honour, I may undertake  
 A journey to my loving Protheus.

*Luc.* Alas ! the way is wearisome and long.

*Jul.* A true-devoted pilgrim is not weary  
 To measure kingdoms with his feeble steps ;  
 Much less shall she that hath love's wings to fly ;  
 And when the flight is made to one so dear,  
 Of such divine perfection, as Sir Protheus.

*Luc.* Better forbear till Protheus make return.

*Jul.* Oh ! know'st thou not his looks are my soul's  
 food ?

Pity the dearth that I have pined in,  
 By longing for that food so long a time.  
 Didst thou but know the inly touch of love,  
 Thou would'st as soon go kindle fire with snow  
 As seek to quench the fire of love with words.

*Luc.* I do not seek to quench your love's hot fire ;  
 But qualify the fire's extreme rage,  
 Left it should burn above the bounds of reason.

*Jul.* The more thou damm'st it up, the more it burns :  
 The current that with gentle murmur glides,  
 Thou know'st, being stopp'd, impatiently doth rage ;  
 But, when his fair course is not hindered,  
 He makes sweet music with the enamell'd stones,  
 Giving a gentle kiss to every sedge  
 He overtaketh in his pilgrimage ;

And so by many winding nooks he strays,  
 With willing sport, to the wild ocean.  
 Then let me go, and hinder not my course:  
 I'll be as patient as a gentle stream,  
 And make a pastime of each weary step,  
 Till the last step have brought me to my love;  
 And there I'll rest; as, after much turmoil,  
 A blessed soul doth in Elysium.

*Luc.* But in what habit will you go along?

*Ful.* Not like a woman; for I would prevent  
 The loose encounters of lascivious men:  
 Gentle Lucetta, fit me with such weeds  
 As may beseem some well-reputed page.

*Luc.* Why then your ladyship must cut your hair.

*Ful.* No, girl; I'll knit it up in silken strings,  
 With twenty odd-conceited true-love knots;  
 To be fantastic may become a youth  
 Of greater time than I shall shew to be.

*Luc.* What fashion, madam, shall I make your breeches?

*Ful.* That fits as well as—"tell me, good my lord,  
 "What compass will you wear your farthingale?"  
 Why, even that fashion thou best lik'st, Lucetta.

*Luc.* You must needs have them with a cod-piece,  
 madam.

*Ful.* Out, out, Lucetta! that will be ill-favour'd.

*Luc.* A round hose, madam, now's not worth a pin,  
 Unless you have a cod-piece to stick pins on.

*Ful.* Lucetta, as thou lov'st me, let me have  
 What thou think'st meet, and is most mannerly:  
 But tell me, wench, how will the world repute me  
 For undertaking so unsta'd a journey?  
 I fear me it will make me scandaliz'd.

*Luc.* If you think so, then stay at home, and go not.

*Ful.* Nay, that I will not.

*Luc.* Then never dream on infamy, but go.  
 If Protheus like your journey when you come,  
 No matter who's displeas'd when you are gone:  
 I fear me he will scarce be pleas'd withal.

*Ful.* That is the least, Lucetta, of my fear:  
 A thousand oaths, an ocean of his tears,

And instances as infinite of love,  
Warrant me welcome to my Protheus.

*Luc.* All these are servants to deceitful men.

*Jul.* Base men, that use them to so base effect!  
But truer stars did govern Protheus' birth:  
His words are bonds, his oaths are oracles;  
His love sincere, his thoughts immaculate;  
His tears pure messengers sent from his heart;  
His heart as far from fraud as heaven from earth.

*Luc.* Pray heaven he prove so, when you come to him!

*Jul.* Now, as thou lov'st me, do him not that wrong,  
To bear a hard opinion of his truth:  
Only deserve my love by loving him;  
And presently go with me to my chamber  
To take a note of what I stand in need of,  
To furnish me upon my longing journey.  
All that is mine I leave at thy dispose,  
My goods, my lands, my reputation;  
Only, in lieu thereof, dispatch me hence.  
Come, answer not, but to it presently;  
I am impatient of my tarrience. [*Exeunt.*]

### A C T III.

#### S C E N E I. *The Duke's Palace in Milan*

*Enter Duke, THURIO, and PROTHEUS.*

*Duke.*

SIR Thurio, give us leave, I pray, a while;  
We have some secrets to confer about. —

[*Exit THURIO.*]

Now tell me, Protheus, what's your will with me?

*Pro.* My gracious lord, that which I would discover,  
The law of friendship bids me to conceal:  
But, when I call to mind your gracious favours  
Done to me, undeserving as I am,  
My duty pricks me on to utter that  
Which else no worldly good should draw from me.  
Know, worthy prince, Sir Valentine, my friend,  
This night intends to steal away your daughter;

Myself

Myself am one made privy to the plot.  
 I know you have determin'd to bestow her  
 On Thurio, whom your gentle daughter hates;  
 And should she thus be stolen away from you,  
 It would be much vexation to your age.  
 Thus, for my duty's sake, I rather chose  
 To cross my friend in his intended drift,  
 Than, by concealing it, heap on your head  
 A pack of sorrows, which would press you down,  
 Being unprevented, to your timeless grave.

*Duke.* Protheus, I thank thee for thine honest ear;  
 Which to requite, command me while I live.  
 This love of theirs myself have often seen,  
 Haply, when they have judg'd me fast asleep;  
 And oftentimes have purpos'd to forbid  
 Sir Valentine her company, and my court:  
 But, fearing lest my jealous aim might err,  
 And so unworthily disgrace the man  
 (A rashness that I ever yet have shunn'd),  
 I gave him gentle looks; thereby to find  
 That which thyself hast now disclos'd to me.  
 And, that thou may'st perceive my fear of this,  
 Knowing that tender youth is soon suggested,  
 I nightly lodge her in an upper tower,  
 The key whereof myself have ever kept;  
 And thence she cannot be convey'd away.

*Pro.* Know, noble lord, they have devis'd a mean  
 How he her chamber-window will ascend,  
 And with a corded ladder fetch her down;  
 For which the youthful lover now is gone,  
 And this way comes he with it presently;  
 Where, if it please you, you may intercept him.  
 But, good my lord, do it so cunningly,  
 That my discovery be not aimed at;  
 For love of you, not hate unto my friend,  
 Hath made me publisher of this pretence.

*Duke.* Upon mine honour he shall never know  
 That I had any light from thee of this.

*Pro.* Adieu, my lord; Sir Valentine is coming.

[Exit PRO.]

*Enter VALENTINE.*

*Duke.* Sir Valentine, whither away so fast?

*Val.* Please it your grace, there is a messenger  
That stays to bear my letters to my friends,  
And I am going to deliver them.

*Duke.* Be they of much import?

*Val.* The tenor of them doth but signify  
My health, and happy being at your court.

*Duke.* Nay, then no matter; stay with me a while;  
I am to break with thee of some affairs,  
That touch me near, wherein thou must be secret.  
'Tis not unknown to thee that I have sought  
To match my friend Sir Thurio to my daughter.

*Val.* I know it well, my lord; and, sure, the match  
Were rich and honourable; besides, the gentleman  
Is full of virtue, bounty, worth, and qualities,  
Befitting such a wife as your fair daughter:  
Cannot your grace win her to fancy him?

*Duke.* No, trust me; she is peevish, sullen, froward,  
Proud, disobedient, stubborn, lacking duty;  
Neither regarding that she is my child,  
Nor fearing me as if I were her father:  
And, may I say to thee, this pride of her's,  
Upon advice, hath drawn my love from her;  
And, where I thought the remnant of mine age  
Should have been cherish'd by her child-like duty,  
I now am full resolv'd to take a wife,  
And turn her out to who will take her in:  
Then let her beauty be her wedding-dower;  
For me, and my possessions, she esteems not.

*Val.* What would your grace have me to do in this?

*Duke.* There is a lady, sir, in Milan, here,  
Whom I affect; but she is nice, and coy,  
And nought esteems my aged eloquence:  
Now, therefore, would I have thee to my tutor  
(For long ago I have forgot to court;  
Besides, the fashion of the time is chang'd),  
How, and which way, I may bestow myself,  
To be regarded in her sun-bright eye.

*Val.* Win her with gifts, if she respect not words;

Dumb



Dumb jewels often, in their silent kind,  
More than quick words, do move a woman's mind.

*Duke.* But she did scorn a present that I sent her.

*Val.* A woman scorns sometimes what best contents her :  
Send her another ; never give her o'er ;  
For scorn at first makes after-love the more.  
If she do frown, 'tis not in hate of you,  
But rather to beget more love in you :  
If she do chide, 'tis not to have you gone ;  
For why, the fools are mad if left alone.  
Take no repulse, whatever she doth say :  
For *get you gone*, she doth not mean *away* :  
Flatter, and praise, commend, extol their graces ;  
Though ne'er so black say they have angels' faces.  
That man that hath a tongue, I say, is no man,  
If with his tongue he cannot win a woman.

*Duke.* But she, I mean, is promis'd by her friends  
Unto a youthful gentleman of worth ;  
And kept severely from resort of men,  
That no man hath access by day to her.

*Val.* Why then I would resort to her by night.

*Duke.* Ay, but the doors be lock'd, and keys kept safe,  
That no man hath recourse to her by night.

*Val.* What lets but one may enter at her window ?

*Duke.* Her chamber is aloft, far from the ground ;  
And built so shelving, that one cannot climb it  
Without apparent hazard of his life.

*Val.* Why, then a ladder, quaintly made of cords,  
To cast up, with a pair of anchoring hooks,  
Would serve to scale another Hero's tower,  
So bold Leander would adventure it.

*Duke.* Now, as thou art a gentleman of blood,  
Advise me where I may have such a ladder.

*Val.* When would you use it ? pray, sir, tell me that.

*Duke.* This very night ; for love is like a child  
That longs for every thing that he can come by.

*Val.* By seven o'clock I'll get you such a ladder.

*Duke.* But hark thee ; I will go to her alone ;  
How shall I best convey the ladder thither ?

*Val.* It will be light, my lord, that you may bear it  
Under a cloak that is of any length.

*Duke.* A cloak as long as thine will serve the turn?

*Val.* Ay, my good lord.

*Duke.* Then let me see thy cloak;  
I'll get me one of such another length.

*Val.* Why, any cloak will serve the turn, my lord.

*Duke.* How shall I fashion me to wear a cloak?—

I pray thee let me feel thy cloak upon me.—

What letter is this same? what's here?—

[*To SILVIA?*

And here an engine fit for my proceeding!

I'll be so bold to break the seal for once. [*Duke reads.*

*My thoughts do harbour with my Silvia nightly,*

*And slaves they are to me that send them flying:*

*Oh, could their master come and go as lightly,*

*Himself would lodge where senseless they are lying!*

*My herald thoughts in thy pure bosom rest them;*

*While I, their king, that thither them importune,*

*Do curse the grace that with such grace hath blest'd them,*

*Because myself do want my servant's fortune:*

*I curse myself, for they are sent by me,*

*That they should harbour where their lord would be.*

What's here? *Silvia*, this night will I enfranchise thee:

'Tis so; and here's the ladder for the purpose.—

Why, Phaëton (for thou art Merops' son),

Wilt thou aspire to guide the heavenly car,

And with thy daring folly burn the world?

Wilt thou reach stars, because they shine on thee?

Go, base intruder! over-weening slave!

Bestow thy fawning smiles on equal mates;

And think my patience more than thy desert,

Is privilege for thy departure hence:

Thank me for this, more than for all the favours

Which, all too much, I have bestow'd on thee.

But, if thou linger in my territories

Longer than swiftest expedition

Will give thee time to leave our royal court,

By heaven, my wrath shall far exceed the love

I ever bore my daughter, or thyself!

Be gone, I will not hear thy vain excuse;

But, as thou lov'st thy life, make speed from hence. [*Exit.*

*Val.*

*Val.* And why not death rather than living torment?  
 To die, is to be banish'd from myself;  
 And Silvia is myself: banish'd from her,  
 Is self from self; a deadly banishment!  
 What light is light, if Silvia be not seen?  
 What joy is joy, if Silvia be not by?  
 Unless it be to think that she is by,  
 And feed upon the shadow of perfection.  
 Except I be by Silvia in the night  
 There is no music in the nightingale;  
 Unless I look on Silvia in the day  
 There is no day for me to look upon;  
 She is my essence; and I leave to be,  
 If I be not by her fair influence  
 Foster'd, illumin'd, cherish'd, kept alive.  
 I fly not death, to fly his deadly doom:  
 Tarry I here, I but attend on death;  
 But, fly I hence, I fly away from life.

*Enter* PROTHEUS *and* LAUNCE.

*Pro.* Run, boy, run; run, and seek him out.

*Laun.* So-ho! so-ho!

*Pro.* What see'st thou?

*Laun.* Him we go to find: there's not a hair  
 On's head but 'tis a Valentine.

*Pro.* Valentine?

*Val.* No.

*Pro.* Who then? his spirit?

*Val.* Neither.

*Pro.* What then?

*Val.* Nothing.

*Laun.* Can nothing speak? master, shall I strike?

*Pro.* Whom would'st thou strike?

*Laun.* Nothing.

*Pro.* Villain, forbear.

*Laun.* Why, sir, I'll strike nothing: I pray you—

*Pro.* Sirrah, I say, forbear: Friend Valentine, a word.

*Val.* My ears are stopp'd, and cannot hear good news,  
 So much of bad already hath possess'd them.

*Pro.* Then in dumb silence will I bury mine,  
 For they are harsh, untuneable, and bad.

*Val.* Is Silvia dead?

*Pro.* No, Valentine.

*Val.* No Valentine, indeed, for sacred Silvia!—  
Hath she forsworn me?

*Pro.* No, Valentine.

*Val.* No, Valentine, if Silvia have forsworn me!—  
What is your news?

*Laun.* Sir, there's a proclamation that you are banish'd.

*Pro.* That thou art banish'd, oh, that is the news!  
From hence, from Silvia, and from me thy friend.

*Val.* Oh, I have fed upon this wo already,  
And now excess of it will make me surfeit.  
Doth Silvia know that I am banish'd?

*Pro.* Ay, ay; and she hath offer'd to the doom  
(Which, unrevers'd, stands in effectual force)  
A sea of melting pearl, which some call tears:  
Those at her father's churlish feet she tender'd;  
With them, upon her knees, her humble self,  
Wringing her hands, whose whiteness so became them;  
As if but now they waxed pale for wo:  
But neither bended knees, pure hands held up,  
Sad sighs, deep groans, nor silver-shedding tears,  
Could penetrate her uncompassionate fire;  
But Valentine, if he be ta'en, must die.  
Besides, her intercession chaf'd him so,  
When she for thy repeal was suppliant,  
That to close prison he commanded her,  
With many bitter threats of 'biding there.

*Val.* No more; unless the next word that thou speak'st  
Have some malignant power upon my life:  
If so, I pray thee breathe it in mine ear,  
As ending anthem of my endless dolour.

*Pro.* Cease to lament for that thou can'st not help.  
And study help for that which thou lament'st.  
Time is the nurse and breeder of all good.  
Here if thou stay, thou can'st not see thy love;  
Besides, thy staying will abridge thy life.  
Hope is a lover's staff; walk hence with that,  
And manage it against despairing thoughts.  
Thy letters may be here, though thou art hence;

Which,

Which, being writ to me, shall be deliver'd  
 Even in the milk-white bosom of thy love.  
 The time now serves not to expostulate :  
 Come, I'll convey thee through the city-gate ;  
 And, ere I part with thee, confer at large  
 Of all that may concern thy love affairs :  
 As thou lov'st Silvia, though not for thyself,  
 Regard thy danger, and along with me.

*Val.* I pray thee, Launce, an if thou see'st my boy,  
 Bid him make haste, and meet me at the north gate.

*Pro.* Go, sirrah, find him out. Come, Valentine.

*Val.* O, my dear Silvia ! hapless Valentine !

[*Exeunt VALENTINE and PROTHEUS.*]

*Laun.* I am but a fool, look you ; and yet I have the  
 wit to think my master is a kind of a knave : but that's all  
 one if he be but one knave. He lives not now that knows  
 me to be in love : yet I am in love ; but a team of horse  
 shall not pluck that from me ; nor who 'tis I love, and yet  
 'tis a woman : but what woman, I will not tell myself, and  
 yet 'tis a milk-maid : yet 'tis not a maid, for she hath had  
 gossips : yet 'tis a maid, for she is her master's maid, and  
 serves for wages. She hath more qualities than a water-  
 spaniel—which is much in a bare Christian. Here is the  
 cat-log [*Pulling out a paper*] of her conditions. Imprimis,  
*She can fetch and carry* : Why, a horse can do no more :  
 nay, a horse cannot fetch, but only carry ; therefore is she  
 better than a jade. Item, *She can milk*, look you : A sweet  
 virtue in a maid with clean hands.

*Enter SPEED.*

*Speed.* How now, signior Launce, what news with your  
 mastership ?

*Laun.* With my master's ship ? why, it is at sea.

*Speed.* Well, your old vice still ; mistake the word :  
 What news then in your paper ?

*Laun.* The blackest news that ever thou heardst.

*Speed.* Why, man, how black ?

*Laun.* Why, as black as ink.

*Speed.* Let me read them.

*Laun.* Fie on thee, jolt-head ; thou canst not read.

*Speed.*

*Speed.* Thou liest, I can.

*Laun.* I will try thee: Tell me this; Who begot thee?

*Speed.* Marry, the son of my grandfather.

*Laun.* O, illiterate loiterer! it was the son of thy grandmother; this proves that thou canst not read.

*Speed.* Come, fool, come: try me in thy paper.

*Laun.* There; and St. Nicholas be thy speed!

*Speed.* Imprimis, *She can milk.*

*Laun.* Ay, that she can.

*Speed.* Item, *She brews good ale.*

*Laun.* And therefore comes the proverb—Blessing of your heart, you brew good ale.

*Speed.* Item, *She can sew.*

*Laun.* That's as much as to say, Can she so?

*Speed.* Item, *She can knit.*

*Laun.* What need a man care for a stock with a wench when she can knit him a stock.

*Speed.* Item, *She can wash and scour.*

*Laun.* A special virtue; for then she need not to be wash'd and scour'd.

*Speed.* Item, *She can spin.*

*Laun.* Then may I set the world on wheels, when she can spin for her living.

*Speed.* Item, *She hath many nameless virtues.*

*Laun.* That's as much as to say, Bastard virtues; that, indeed, know not their fathers, and therefore have no names.

*Speed.* *Here follow her vices.*

*Laun.* Close at the heels of her virtues.

*Speed.* Item, *She is not to be kiss'd fasting, in respect of her breath.*

*Laun.* Well that fault may be mended with a breakfast: Read on.

*Speed.* Item, *She hath a sweet mouth.*

*Laun.* That makes amends for her sour breath.

*Speed.* Item, *She doth talk in her sleep.*

*Laun.* It's no matter for that, so she sleep not in her talk.

*Speed.* Item, *She is slow in words.*

*Laun.* O villain! that set down among her vices! To  
be

be slow in words is a woman's only virtue: I pray thee, out with't; and place it for her chief virtue.

*Speed.* Item, *She is proud.*

*Laun.* Out with that too! it was Eve's legacy, and cannot be ta'en from her.

*Speed.* Item, *She hath no teeth.*

*Laun.* I care not for that neither, because I love crusts.

*Speed.* Item, *She is curst.*

*Laun.* Well; the best is, she hath no teeth to bite.

*Speed.* Item, *She will often praise her liquor.*

*Laun.* If her liquor be good she shall: if she will not I will; for good things should be praised.

*Speed.* Item, *She is too liberal.*

*Laun.* Of her tongue she cannot; for that's writ down she is slow of: of her purse she shall not; for that I'll keep shut: now of another thing she may; and that I cannot help. Well, proceed.

*Speed.* Item, *She hath more hair than wit, and more faults than hairs, and more wealth than faults.*

*Laun.* Stop there; I'll have her: she was mine, and not mine, twice or thrice in that last article. Rehearse that once more.

*Speed.* Item, *She hath more hair than wit—*

*Laun.* More hair than wit—it may be; I'll prove it: The cover of the salt hides the salt, and therefore it is more than the salt: the hair that covers the wit is more than the wit; for the greater hides the less. What's next?

*Speed.—And more faults than hairs—*

*Laun.* That's monstrous: oh, that that were out!

*Speed.—And more wealth than faults.*

*Laun.* Why, that word makes the fault gracious: Well, I'll have her: And if it be a match, as nothing is impossible—

*Speed.* What then?

*Laun.* Why, then will I tell thee—that thy master stays for thee at the north gate.

*Speed.* For me!

*Laun.* For thee! ay; who art thou? he hath staid for a better man than thee.

*Speed.* And must I go to him?

*Laun.* Thou must run to him, for thou hast staid so long, that going will scarce serve the turn.

*Speed.* Why didst not tell me sooner? pox on your love-letters!

*Laun.* Now will he be swing'd for reading my letter: An unmannerly slave, that will thrust himself into secrets! —I'll after, to rejoice in the boy's correction. [*Exeunt.*]

## S C E N E II.

*Enter Duke and THURIO, and PROTHEUS behind.*

*Duke.* Sir Thurio, fear not but that she will love you. Now Valentine is banish'd from her sight.

*Thu.* Since his exile she hath despis'd me most, Forsworn my company, and rail'd at me, That I am desperate of obtaining her,

*Duke.* This weak impress of love is as a figure Trench'd in ice; which with an hour's heat Dissolves to water, and doth lose his form. A little time will melt her frozen thoughts, And worthless Valentine shall be forgot. — How now, Sir Protheus? Is your countryman, According to our proclamation, gone?

*Pro.* Gone, my good lord.

*Duke.* My daughter takes his going heavily.

*Pro.* A little time, my lord, will kill that grief.

*Duke.* So I believe; but Thurio thinks not so. — Protheus, the good conceit I hold of thee (For thou hast shewn some sign of good desert), Makes me the better to confer with thee.

*Pro.* Longer than I prove loyal to your grace, Let me not live to look upon your grace.

*Duke.* Thou know'st how willingly I would effect The match between Sir Thurio and my daughter.

*Pro.* I do, my lord.

*Duke.* And also, I do think, thou art not ignorant How she opposes her against my will.

*Pro.* She did, my lord, when Valentine was here.

*Duke.* Ay, and perversely she perseveres so.

What



What might we do to make the girl forget  
The love of Valentine, and love Sir Thurio.

*Pro.* The best way is to slander Valentine  
With falsehood, cowardice, and poor descent;  
Three things that women highly hold in hate.

*Duke.* Ay, but she'll think that it is spoke in hate.

*Pro.* Ay, if his enemy deliver it:  
Therefore it must, with circumstance, be spoken  
By one whom she esteemeth as his friend.

*Duke.* Then you must undertake to slander him.

*Pro.* And that, my lord, I shall be loth to do:  
'Tis an ill office for a gentleman;  
Especially against his very friend.

*Duke.* Where your good word cannot advantage him,  
Your slander never can endamage him;  
Therefore the office is indifferent,  
Being entreated to it by your friend.

*Pro.* You have prevail'd, my lord: if I can do it,  
By aught that I can speak in his dispraise,  
She shall not long continue love to him.  
But say, thus weed her love from Valentine,  
It follows not that she will love Sir Thurio.

*Thu.* Therefore, as you unwind her love from him,  
Lest it should ravel, and be good to none,  
You must provide to bottom it on me:  
Which must be done, by praising me as much  
As you in worth dispraise Sir Valentine.

*Duke.* And, Protheus, we dare trust you in this kind;  
Because we know, on Valentine's report,  
You are already love's firm votary,  
And cannot soon revolt and change your mind.  
Upon this warrant shall you have access,  
Where you with Silvia may confer at large;  
For she is lumpsish, heavy, melancholy,  
And, for your friend's sake, will be glad of you;  
Where you may temper her, by your persuasion,  
To hate young Valentine, and love my friend.

*Pro.* As much as I can do, I will effect:—  
But you, Sir Thurio, are not sharp enough;  
You must lay lime to tangle her desires,

By wailful sonnets, whose composed rhimes  
Should be full fraught with serviceable vows.

*Duke.* Ay, much is the force of heaven-bred poetry.

*Pro.* Say, that upon the altar of her beauty  
You sacrifice your tears, your sighs, your heart :  
Write till your ink be dry ; and with your tears  
Moist it again ; and frame some feeling line  
That may discover such integrity : —  
For Orpheus' lute was strung with poets' sinews ;  
Whose golden touch could soften steel and stones,  
Make tigers tame, and huge leviathans  
Forake unfounded deeps to dance on sands.  
After your dire-lamenting elegies,  
Visit by night your lady's chamber-window  
With some sweet concert ; to their instruments  
Tune a deploring dump ; the night's dead silence  
Will well become such sweet complaining grievance.  
This, or else nothing, will inherit her.

*Duke.* This discipline shews thou hast been in love.

*Thu.* And thy advice this night I'll put in practice :  
Therefore, sweet Protheus, my direction-giver,  
Let us into the city presently  
To sort some gentlemen well skill'd in music :  
I have a sonnet that will serve the turn  
To give the onset to thy good advice.

*Duke.* About it gentlemen.

*Pro.* We'll wait upon your grace till after supper ;  
And afterwards determine our proceedings.

*Duke.* Even now about it ; I will pardon you. [*Exeunt.*]

## A C T IV.

### SCENE I. *A Forest leading towards Mantua.*

*Enter certain Outlaws.*

*I Outlaw.*

**F**ELLOWS, stand fast ; I see a passenger.

*2 Out.* If there be ten shrink not, but down with 'em.

*Enter VALENTINE and SPEED.*

*3 Out.* Stand, sir, and throw us what you have about  
you ;

If not, we'll make you sit, and rifle you.

*Speed.*

*Speed.* Sir, we are undone! these are the villains  
That all the travellers do fear so much.

*Val.* My friends—

*1 Out.* That's not so, sir; we are your enemies.

*2 Out.* Peace; we'll hear him.

*3 Out.* Ay, by my beard, will we;  
For he's a proper man.

*Val.* Then know that I have little wealth to lose:  
A man I am, cross'd with adversity;  
My riches are these poor habiliments,  
Of which, if you should here disfurnish me,  
You take the sum and substance that I have.

*2 Out.* Whither travel you?

*Val.* To Verona.

*1 Out.* Whence came you?

*Val.* From Milan.

*3 Out.* Have you long sojourn'd there?

*Val.* Some sixteen months; and longer might have staid,  
If crooked fortune had not thwarted me.

*1 Out.* What, were you banish'd thence?

*Val.* I was.

*2 Out.* For what offence?

*Val.* For that which now torments me to rehearse:  
I kill'd a man, whose death I much repent;  
But yet I slew him manfully in fight,  
Without false 'vantage, or base treachery.

*1 Out.* Why ne'er repent it, if it were done so:  
But were you banish'd for so small a fault?

*Val.* I was, and held me glad of such a doom.

*1 Out.* Have you the tongues?

*Val.* My youthful travel therein made me happy,  
Or else I often had been miserable.

*3 Out.* By the bare scalp of Robin Hood's fat friar,  
This fellow were a king for our wild faction!

*1 Out.* We'll have him: sirs, a word.

*Speed.* Master, be one of them;  
It is a kind of honourable thievery.

*Val.* Peace, villain!

*2 Out.* Tell us this; have you any thing to take to?

*Val.* Nothing but my fortune.

*3 Out.*

3 *Out.* Know then, that some of us are gentlemen;  
Such as the fury of ungovern'd youth  
Thrust from the company of awful men:  
Myself was from Verona banish'd  
For practising to steal away a lady,  
An heir, and niece ally'd unto the duke.

2 *Out.* And I from Mantua, for a gentleman;  
Whom, in my mood, I stabb'd unto the heart.

1 *Out.* And I for such like petty crimes as these:  
But to the purpose—(for we cite our faults  
That they may hold excus'd our lawless lives)  
And partly seeing you are beautify'd  
With goodly shape, and by your own report  
A linguist, and a man of such perfection  
As we do in our quality much want—

2 *Out.* Indeed, because you are a banish'd man,  
Therefore, above the rest, we parley to you:  
Are you content to be our general?  
To make a virtue of necessity,  
And live, as we do, in the wilderness?

3 *Out.* What say'st thou? wilt thou be of our consort?  
Say ay, and be the captain of us all:  
We'll do thee homage, and be rul'd by thee,  
Love thee as our commander and our king.

1 *Out.* But if thou scorn our courtesy thou dy'st.

2 *Out.* Thou shalt not live to brag what we have offer'd.

*Val.* I take your offer, and will live with you;  
Provided that you do no outrages  
On silly women or poor passengers.

3 *Out.* No; we detest such vile, base practices.  
Come, go with us, we'll bring thee to our crews,  
And shew thee all the treasure we have got;  
Which, with ourselves, all rest at thy dispose. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. Under SILVIA's Apartment in Milan.

*Enter PROTHEUS.*

*Pro.* Already have I been false to Valentine,  
And now I must be as unjust to Thurio.

*Under*

Under the colour of commending him,  
 I have access my own love to prefer;  
 But Silvia is too fair, too true, too holy,  
 To be corrupted with my worthless gifts.  
 When I protest true loyalty to her,  
 She twits me with my falsehood to my friend;  
 When to her beauty I commend my vows,  
 She bids me think how I have been forsworn  
 In breaking faith with Julia whom I lov'd:  
 And, notwithstanding all her sudden quips,  
 The least whereof would quell a lover's hope,  
 Yet, spaniel-like, the more she spurns my love  
 The more it grows, and fawneth on her still.  
 But here comes Thurio: now must we to her window,  
 And give some evening music to her ear.

*Enter THURIO and Musicians.*

*Thu.* How now, Sir Protheus, are you crept before us?

*Pro.* Ay, gentle Thurio; for you know that love  
 Will creep in service where it cannot go.

*Thu.* Ay, but I hope, sir, that you love not here.

*Pro.* Sir, but I do; or else I would be hence.

*Thu.* Whom, Silvia?

*Pro.* Ay, Silvia—for your sake.

*Thu.* I thank you for your own. Now, gentlemen,  
 Let's tune, and to it lustily for a while.

*Enter Host, at a Distance; and JULIA in Boy's Clothes.*

*Host.* Now, my young guest! methinks you're ally-  
 cholly; I pray you why is it?

*Jul.* Marry, mine host, because I cannot be merry.

*Host.* Come, we'll have you merry; I'll bring you  
 where you shall hear music, and see the gentleman that you  
 ask'd for.

*Jul.* But shall I hear him speak?

*Host.* Ay, that you shall.

*Jul.* That will be music.

*Host.* Hark! hark!

*Jul.* Is he among these?

*Host.* Ay; but peace, let's hear 'em.

D

SONG.

## S O N G.

*Who is Silvia? what is she,  
That all our swains commend her?  
Holy, fair, and wise, is she;  
The heavens such grace did lend her,  
That she might admired be.*

*Is she kind as she is fair?  
For beauty lives with kindness:  
Love doth to her eyes repair,  
To help him of his blindness;  
And, being help'd, inhabits there.*

*Then to Silvia let us sing,  
That Silvia is excelling;  
She excels each mortal thing  
Upon the dull earth dwelling:  
To her let us garlands bring.*

*Host.* How now? are you sadder than you were before?  
How do you, man? the music likes you not.

*Jul.* You mistake; the musician likes me not.

*Host.* Why, my pretty youth?

*Jul.* He plays false, father?

*Host.* How? out of tune on the strings?

*Jul.* Not so; but yet so false that he grieves my very heart-strings.

*Host.* You have a quick ear.

*Jul.* Ay, I would I were deaf! it makes me have a slow heart.

*Host.* I perceive you delight not in music.

*Jul.* Not a whit when it jars so.

*Host.* Hark! what fine change is in the music.

*Jul.* Ay, that change is the spite.

*Host.* You would have them always play but one thing.

*Jul.* I would always have one play but one thing.

But, host, doth this Sir Protheus, that we talk on,  
Often resort unto this gentlewoman?

*Host.* I tell you what Launce his man told me, he lov'd  
her out of all nick.

*Jul.* Where is Launce?

*Host.*

*Hof.* Gone to seek his dog; which to-morrow, by his master's command, he must carry for a present to his lady.

*Jul.* Peace! stand aside, the company parts.

*Pro.* Sir Thurio, fear not you! I will so plead,  
That you shall say my cunning drift excels.

*Thu.* Where meet we?

*Pro.* At Saint Gregory's well.

*Thu.* Farewell. [*Exeunt THURIO and Music.*]

*SILVIA appears above at her Window.*

*Pro.* Madam, good even to your ladyship.

*Sil.* I thank you for your music, gentlemen:  
Who is that spake?

*Pro.* One, lady, if you knew his pure heart's truth  
You'd quickly learn to know him by his voice.

*Sil.* Sir Protheus, as I take it.

*Pro.* Sir Protheus, gentle lady, and your servant.

*Sil.* What is your will?

*Pro.* That I may compass yours.

*Sil.* You have your wish; my will is even this—  
That presently you hie you home to bed.

Thou subtle, perjur'd, false, disloyal man!

Think'st thou I'm so shallow, so conceitless,

To be seduc'd by thy flattery,

That hast deceived so many with thy vows?

Return, return, and make thy love amends.

For me, by this pale queen of night I swear

I am so far from granting thy request,

That I despise thee for thy wrongful suit;

And by and bye intend to chide myself,

Even for this time I spend in talking to thee.

*Pro.* I grant, sweet love, that I did love a lady;  
But she is dead.

*Jul.* [*Aside.*] 'Twere false, if I should speak it;  
For I am sure she is not buried.

*Sil.* Say that she be, yet Valentine thy friend  
Survives; to whom thyself art witness  
I am betroth'd; and art thou not ashamed  
To wrong him with thy importunacy?

*Pro.* I likewise hear that Valentine is dead.

*Sil.* And so suppose am I; for in his grave  
Assure thyself my love is buried.

*Pro.* Sweet lady, let me rake it from the earth.

*Sil.* Go to thy lady's grave and call her's thence;  
Or, at the least, in her's sepulchre thine.

*Jul.* [*Aside.*] He heard not that.

*Pro.* Madam, if that your heart be so obdurate,  
Vouchsafe me yet your picture for my love,  
The picture that is hanging in your chamber;  
To that I'll speak, to that I'll sigh and weep;  
For, since the substance of your perfect self  
Is else devoted, I am but a shadow;  
And to your shadow will I make true love.

*Jul.* [*Aside.*] If 'twere a substance, you would sure  
deceive it,

And make it but a shadow, as I am.

*Sil.* I am very loath to be your idol, sir;  
But, since your falsehood shall become you well  
To worship shadows, and adore false shapes,  
Send to me in the morning, and I'll send it;  
And so good rest.

*Pro.* As wretches have o'er night  
That wait for execution in the morn.

[*Exeunt PROTHEUS and SILVIA.*]

*Jul.* Host, will you go?

*Host.* By my hallidom I was fast asleep.

*Jul.* Pray you, where lies Sir Protheus?

*Host.* Marry, at my house: trust me I think 'tis almost  
day.

*Jul.* Not so; but it hath been the longest night  
That e'er I watch'd, and the most heaviest. [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III.

*Enter EGLAMOUR.*

*Egl.* This is the hour that madam Silvia  
Entreated me to call, and know her mind;  
There's some great matter she'd employ me in.—  
Madam, madam!

SILVIA



SILVIA *above at her Window.*

*Sil.* Who calls?

*Egl.* Your servant and your friend ;  
One that attends your ladyship's command.

*Sil.* Sir Eglamour, a thousand times good morrow.

*Egl.* As many, worthy lady, to yourself.  
According to your ladyship's impose,  
I am thus early come to know what service  
It is your pleasure to command me in.

*Sil.* O, Eglamour ! thou art a gentleman  
(Think not I flatter, for I swear I do not)  
Valiant, wise, remorseful, well accomplish'd,  
Thou art not ignorant what dear good will  
I bear unto the banish'd Valentine ;  
Nor how my father would enforce me marry  
Vain Thurio, whom my very soul abhors.  
Thyself hast lov'd ; and I have heard thee say  
No grief did ever come so near thy heart,  
As when thy lady and thy true love dy'd,  
Upon whose grave thou vow'dst pure chastity.  
Sir Eglamour, I would to Valentine,  
To Mantua, where I hear he makes abode ;  
And, for the ways are dangerous to pass,  
I do desire thy worthy company,  
Upon whose faith and honour I repose.  
Urge not my father's anger, Eglamour,  
But think upon my grief, a lady's grief ;  
And on the justice of my flying hence,  
To keep me from a most unholy match,  
Which heaven and fortune still reward with plagues.  
I do desire thee, even from a heart  
As full of sorrows as the sea of sands,  
To bear me company, and go with me ;  
If not, to hide what I have said to thee,  
That I may venture to depart alone.

*Egl.* Madam, I pity much your grievances ;  
Which, since I know they virtuously are plac'd,  
I give consent to go along with you ;  
Recking as little what betideth me,  
As much I wish all good befortune you.  
When will you go ?

*Sil.* This evening coming.

*Egl.* Where shall I meet you ?

*Sil.* At friar Patrick's cell,  
Where I intend holy confession.

*Egl.* I will not fail your ladyship :  
Good-morrow, gentle lady.

*Sil.* Good-morrow, kind Sir Eglemour.

[*Exeunt.*

*Enter LAUNCE, with his Dog.*

*Laun.* When a man's servant shall play the cur with him, look you, it goes hard : one that I brought up of a puppy ; one that I sav'd from drowning, when three or four of his blind brothers and sisters went to it ! I have taught him—even as one would say precisely, Thus I would teach a dog. I was sent to deliver him as a present to Mistress Silvia, from my master ; and I came no sooner into the dining-chamber but he steps me to her trencher, and steals her capon's leg. O, 'tis a foul thing, when a cur cannot keep himself in all companies ! I would have, as one should say, one that takes upon him to be a dog indeed, to be, as it were, a dog at all things. If I had not had more wit than he, to take a fault upon me that he did, I think verily he had been hang'd for't ; sure as I live he had suffer'd for't : you shall judge. He thrusts me himself into the company of three or four gentlemen-like dogs under the duke's table : he had not been there (bless the mark) a pissing while, but all the chamber smelt him. *Out with the dog,* says one ; *What cur is that ?* says another ; *Whip him out,* says the third ; *Hang him up,* says the duke : I, having been acquainted with the smell before, knew it was Crab ; and goes me to the fellow that whips the dogs : *Friend,* quoth I, *you mean to whip the dog ?* *Ay, marry, do I,* quoth he. *You do him the more wrong,* quoth I ; *'twas I did the thing you wot of.* He makes no more ado, but whips me out of the chamber. How many masters would do this for their servant ? nay, I'll be sworn I have sat in the stocks for puddings he hath stolen, otherwise he had been executed : I have stood on the pillory for geese he hath kill'd, otherwise he had suffer'd for't : thou think'st not of this now !—Nay, I remember the trick you serv'd me, when I took my leave of madam Silvia ; did not I bid thee still mark me, and do as I do?

do? when didst thou see me heave up my leg, and make water against a gentlewoman's farthingale? didst thou ever see me do such a trick?

*Enter* PROTHERUS *and* JULIA.

*Pro.* Sebastian is thy name? I like thee well,  
And will employ thee in some service presently.

*Jul.* In what you please;—I'll do, Sir, what I can.

*Pro.* I hope thou wilt.—How now, you whoreson peasant,  
[*To* LAUNCE.

Where have you been these two days loitering?

*Laun.* Marry, sir, I carry'd mistress Silvia the dog you bade me.

*Pro.* And what says she to my little jewel?

*Laun.* Marry, she says your dog was a cur; and tells you curriish thanks is good enough for such a present.

*Pro.* But she receiv'd my dog?

*Laun.* No, indeed, she did not: here I have brought him back again.

*Pro.* What, didst thou offer her this from me?

*Laun.* Ay, sir; the other squirrel was stol'n from me by the hangman's boy in the market-place: and then I offer'd her mine own; who is a dog as big as ten of yours, and, therefore the gift the greater.

*Pro.* Go, get thee hence, and find my dog again,  
Or ne'er return again into my sight.

Away, I say: Stay'st thou to vex me here?

A slave, that still an end turns me to shame.

[*Exit* LAUNCE.

Sebastian, I have entertained thee,  
Partly, that I have need of such a youth,  
That can with some discretion do my business.  
For 'tis no trusting to yon foolish lowt;  
But chiefly for thy face, and thy behaviour;  
Which (if my augury deceive me not)  
Witness good bringing up, fortune, and truth:  
Therefore know thou; for this I entertain thee.  
Go presently, and take this ring with thee  
Deliver it to madam Silvia:  
She lov'd me well, deliver'd it to me.

D 4

*Jul.*

*Jul.* It seems you lov'd not her, to leave her token ;  
She's dead, belike.

*Pro.* Not so ; I think she lives.

*Jul.* Alas !

*Pro.* Why do'st thou cry alas ?

*Jul.* I cannot choose but pity her.

*Pro.* Wherefore should'st thou pity her ?

*Jul.* Because, methinks, that she lov'd you as well  
As you do love your lady Silvia :

She dreams on him that has forgot her love ;

You doat on her that cares not for your love.

'Tis pity love should be so contrary,

And, thinking on it, makes me cry alas !

*Pro.* Well, give her that ring, and therewithal

This letter ;—that's her chamber.—Tell my lady,

I claim the promise for her heavenly picture.

Your message done, hie home unto my chamber,

Where thou shalt find me sad and solitary.

[*Exit PROTHEUS.*]

*Jul.* How many women would do such a message ?

Alas, poor Protheus ! thou hast entertain'd

A fox to be the shepherd of thy lambs :

Alas, poor fool ! why do I pity him

That with his very heart despiseth me ?

Because he loves her he despiseth me ;

Because I love him I must pity him.

This ring I gave him when he parted from me,

To bind him to remember my good will :

And now I am (unhappy messenger)

To plead for that which I would not obtain ;

To carry that which I would have refus'd ;

To praise his faith which I would have disprais'd.

I am my master's true confirmed love ;

But cannot be true servant to my master,

Unless I prove false traitor to myself.

Yet will I woo for him ; but yet so coldly,

As, heaven it knows, I would not have him speed.

*Enter SILVIA.*

Gentlewoman, good-day ! I pray you be my mean  
To bring me where to speak with madam Silvia.

*Sil.*

*Sil.* What would you with her, if that I be she?

*Jul.* If you be she, I do entreat your patience  
To hear me speak the message I am sent on.

*Sil.* From whom?

*Jul.* From my master, Sir Protheus, madam.

*Sil.* Oh! he sends you for a picture?

*Jul.* Ay, madam.

*Sil.* Ursula, bring my picture there.

[Picture brought.

Go, give your master this: tell him from me,  
One Julia, that his changing thoughts forget,  
Would better fit his chamber than this shadow.

*Jul.* Madam, please you peruse this letter.

—Pardon me, madam; I have unadvis'd  
Deliver'd you a paper that I should not;  
This is the letter to your ladyship.

*Sil.* I pray thee let me look on that again.

*Jul.* It may not be; good madam, pardon me.

*Sil.* There, hold.

I will not look upon your master's lines:  
I know they are stuff'd with protestations,  
And full of new-found oaths; which he will break  
As easily as I do tear this paper.

*Jul.* Madam, he sends your ladyship this ring.

*Sil.* The more shame for him that he sends it me;  
For, I have heard him say a thousand times,  
His Julia gave it him at his departure:  
Though his false finger hath profan'd the ring,  
Mine shall not do his Julia so much wrong.

*Jul.* She thanks you.

*Sil.* What say'st thou?

*Jul.* I thank you, madam, that you tender her:  
Poor gentlewoman! my master wrongs her much.

*Sil.* Dost thou know her?

*Jul.* Almost as well as I do know myself:  
To think upon her woes, I do protest  
That I have wept an hundred several times.

*Sil.* Belike she thinks that Protheus hath forsook her.

*Jul.* I think she doth; and that's her cause of sorrow.

*Sil.* Is she not passing fair?

*Jul.*

*Jul.* She hath been fairer, madam, than she is :  
 When she did think my master lov'd her well,  
 She, in my judgment, was as fair as you ;  
 But since she did neglect her looking-glass,  
 And threw her sun-expelling mask away,  
 The air hath starv'd the roses in her cheeks,  
 And pinch'd the lily-tincture of her face,  
 That now she is become as black as I.

*Sil.* How tall was she ?

*Jul.* About my stature : for, at Pentecost,  
 When all our pageants of delight were play'd,  
 Our youth got me to play the woman's part,  
 And I was trimm'd in madam Julia's gown ;  
 Which served me as fit, by all men's judgment,  
 As if the garment had been made for me :  
 Therefore I know she is about my height.  
 And, at that time, I made her weep a-good,  
 For I did play a lamentable part :  
 Madam, 'twas Ariadne, passioning  
 For Theseus' perjury, and unjust flight ;  
 Which I so lively acted with my tears  
 That my poor mistress, moved therewithal,  
 Wept bitterly ; and, would I might be dead,  
 If I in thought felt not her very sorrow !

*Sil.* She is beholden to thee, gentle youth :—  
 Alas, poor lady ! desolate and left !—  
 I weep myself, to think upon thy words ;  
 Here, youth, there is my purse ; I give thee this  
 For thy sweet mistress' sake, because thou lov'st her.  
 Farewell.

[Exit SILVIA.]

*Jul.* And she shall thank you for't, if e'er you know her.—  
 A virtuous gentlewoman, mild and beautiful.  
 I hope my master's suit will be but cold,  
 Since she respects my mistress' love so much.  
 Alas, how love can trifle with itself !  
 Here is her picture : Let me see ; I think,  
 If I had such a tire, this face of mine  
 Were full as lovely as is this of her's :  
 And yet the painter flatter'd her a little,  
 Unless I flatter with myself too much.  
 Her hair is auburn, mine is perfect yellow :

If that be all the difference in his love  
 I'll get me such a colour'd periwig.  
 Her eyes are grey as glass; and so are mine:  
 Ay, but her forehead's low; and mine's as high.  
 What should it be that he respects in her,  
 But I can make respective in myself,  
 If this fond love were not a blinded god?  
 Come, shadow, come, and take this shadow up,  
 For 'tis thy rival. O, thou senseless form!  
 Thou shalt be worshipp'd, kiss'd, lov'd, and ador'd;  
 And, were there sense in his idolatry,  
 My substance should be statue in thy stead.  
 I'll use thee kindly for thy mistress' sake,  
 That us'd me so; or else, by Jove I vow,  
 I should have scratch'd out your unseeing eyes,  
 To make my master out of love with thee. [Exit.]

## A C T V.

SCENE I. *Near the Friar's Cell, in Milan.*

*Enter EGLAMOUR.*

*Eglamour.*

**T**HE sun begins to gild the western sky;  
 And now it is about the very hour  
 That Silvia at friar Patrick's cell should meet me.  
 She will not fail; for lovers break not hours,  
 Unless it be to come before their time;  
 So much they spur their expedition.  
 See where she comes: Lady, a happy evening.

*Enter SILVIA.*

*Sil.* Amen, amen! go on, good Eglamour,  
 Out at the postern by the abbey-wall;  
 I fear I am attended by some spies.

*Egl.* Fear not: the forest is not three leagues off;  
 If we recover that, we are sure enough. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II. *An Apartment in the Duke's Palace,**Enter THURIO, PROTHEUS, and JULIA.**Thu.* Sir Protheus, what says Silvia to my suit?*Pro.* Oh, sir, I find her milder than she was;  
*And yet she takes exceptions at your person.**Thu.* What, that my leg is too long?*Pro.* No; that it is too little.*Thu.* I'll wear a boot to make it somewhat rounder.*Pro.* But love will not be spurr'd to what it loaths.*Thu.* What says she to my face?*Pro.* She says it is a fair one.*Thu.* Nay, then the wanton lies; my face is black.*Pro.* But pearls are fair; and the old saying is,  
"Black men are pearls in beauteous ladies' eyes."*Jul.* 'Tis true, such pearls as put out ladies' eyes;  
*For I had rather wink than look on them.* [*Aside.*]*Thu.* How likes she my discourse?*Pro.* Ill, when you talk of war.*Thu.* But well when I discourse of love and peace?*Jul.* But better, indeed, when you hold your peace. [*Aside.*]*Thu.* What says she to my valour?*Pro.* Oh, sir, she makes no doubt of that.*Jul.* She needs not, when she knows it cowardice. [*Aside.*]*Thu.* What says she to my birth?*Pro.* That you are well deriv'd.*Jul.* True; from a gentleman to a fool. [*Aside.*]*Thu.* Considers she my possessions?*Pro.* O, ay; and pities them.*Thu.* Wherefore?*Jul.* That such an ass should owe them. [*Aside.*]*Pro.* That they are out by lease.*Jul.* Here comes the duke.*Enter Duke.**Duke.* How now, Sir Protheus? How now, Thurio?  
Which of you saw Sir Eglamour of late?*Thu.* Not I.*Pro.* Nor I.*Duke.*



*Duke.* Saw you my daughter?

*Pro.* Neither.

*Duke.* Why then she's fled unto that peasant Valentine;  
And Eglamour is in her company.

'Tis true; for friar Laurence met them both

As he in penance wander'd through the forest;

Him he knew well, and guess'd that it was she;

But, being mask'd, he was not sure of it:

Besides, she did intend confession

At Patrick's cell this even; and there she was not:

These likelihoods confirm her flight from hence.

Therefore, I pray you, stand not to discourse,

But mount you presently; and meet with me

Upon the rising of the mountain-foot

That leads toward Mantua; whither they are fled:

Dispatch, sweet gentlemen, and follow me. [*Exit Duke.*]

*Thu.* Why this it is to be a peevish girl,

That flies her fortune when it follows her:

I'll after; more to be reveng'd on Eglamour

Than for the love of reckless Silvia.

*Pro.* And I will follow, more for Silvia's love

Than hate of Eglamour that goes with her.

*Jul.* And I will follow more to cross that love

Than hate for Silvia that is gone for love. [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III. *The Forest.*

*Enter SILVIA and Outlaws.*

*1 Out.* Come, come;

Be patient, we must bring you to our captain.

*Sil.* A thousand more mischances than this one  
Have learned me how to brook this patiently.

*2 Out.* Come, bring her away.

*1 Out.* Where is the gentleman that was with her?

*3 Out.* Being nimble-footed, he hath outrun us;  
But Moses and Valerius follow him.

Go thou with her to the west end of the wood,

There

There is our captain; we'll follow him that's fled;  
The thicket is beset, he cannot escape.

I *Out.* Come, I must bring you to our captain's cave;  
Fear not; he bears an honourable mind,  
And will not use a woman lawlessly.

Sil. O Valentine, this I endure for thee! [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE IV. *The Outlaws' Cave in the Forest.*

*Enter VALENTINE.*

Val. How use doth breed a habit in a man!  
This shadowy desert, unfrequented woods,  
I better brook than flourishing peopled towns:  
Here can I sit alone, unseen of any,  
And to the nightingale's complaining notes  
Tune my distresses, and record my woes.  
O thou! that dost inhabit in my breast,  
Leave not the mansion so long tenantless;  
Left, growing ruinous, the building fall,  
And leave no memory of what it was!  
Repair me with thy presence, Silvia;  
'Thou gentle nymph, cherish thy forlorn swain!—  
What hallowing and what stir is this to-day?  
These are my mates, that make their wills their law,  
Have some unhappy passenger in chace:  
They love me well; yet I have much to do  
To keep them from uncivil outrages.  
Withdraw thee, Valentine; Who's this come's here?  
[VAL. *Steps aside.*]

*Enter PROTHERUS, SILVIA, and JULIA.*

Pro. Madam, this service have I done for you  
(Though you respect not aught your servant doth),  
To hazard life, and rescue you from him  
That would have forc'd your honour and your love.  
Vouchsafe me for my meed but one fair look;

A smaller

A smaller boon than this I cannot beg,  
And less than this I am sure you cannot give.

*Val.* How like a dream is this I see and hear!  
Love, lend me patience to forbear a while. [*Aside.*

*Sil.* O miserable, unhappy that I am!

*Pro.* Unhappy were you, madam, ere I came;  
But, by my coming, I have made you happy.

*Sil.* By thy approach thou mak'st me most unhappy.

*Ful.* And me, when he approacheth to your presence. [*Aside.*

*Sil.* Had I been seized by an hungry lion  
I would have been a breakfast to the beast,  
Rather than have false Protheus rescue me.  
Oh! heaven be judge how I love Valentine,  
Whose life's as tender to me as my soul;  
And full as much (for more there cannot be)  
I do detest false, perjur'd Protheus;  
Therefore be gone, solicit me no more.

*Pro.* What dangerous action, stood it next to death,  
Would I not undergo for one calm look?  
Oh! 'tis the curse in love, and still approv'd,  
When women cannot love where they're belov'd.

*Sil.* When Protheus cannot love where he's belov'd,  
Read over Julia's heart, thy first best love,  
For whose dear sake thou didst then rend thy faith  
Into a thousand oaths; and all those oaths  
Descended into perjury to love me.  
Thou hast no faith left now, unless thou hadst two,  
And that's far worse than none; better have none  
Than plural faith, which is too much by one;  
Thou counterfeit to thy true friend!

*Pro.* In love  
Who respects friend?

*Sil.* All men but Protheus.

*Pro.* Nay, if the gentle spirit of moving words  
Can no way change you to a milder form  
I'll woo you, like a soldier, at arms end;  
And love you 'gainst the nature of love, force you.

*Sil.* Oh, heaven!

*Pro.*

*Pro.* I'll force thee yield to my desire.

*Val.* Ruffian, let go that rude uncivil touch;  
Thou friend of an ill fashion!

*Pro.* Valentine!

*Val.* Thou common friend, that's without faith or love  
(For such is a friend now); treacherous man!

Thou hast beguiled my hopes; nought but mine eye

Could have persuaded me: now I dare not say

I have one friend alive; thou would'st disprove me.

Who should be trusted when one's own right hand

Is perjur'd to the bosom? Protheus,

I am sorry I must never trust thee more;

But count the world a stranger for thy sake.

The private wound is deepest: Oh time, most curst!

'Mongst all foes that a friend should be the worst!

*Pro.* My shame and guilt confounds me.—

Forgive me, Valentine: if hearty sorrow

Be a sufficient ransom for offence,

I tender it here; I do as truly suffer

As e'er I did commit.

*Val.* Then I am paid;

And once again I do receive thee honest:—

Who by repentance is not satisfy'd,

Is nor of heaven, nor earth; for these are pleas'd;

By penitence the Eternal's wrath's appeas'd:—

And, that my love may appear plain and free,

All that was mine in Silvia I give thee.

*Jul.* Oh me, unhappy!

[Faints.]

*Pro.* Look to the boy.

*Val.* Why, boy! why, wag! how now? what is the  
matter?

Look up; speak.

*Jul.* O good sir, my master charg'd me

To deliver a ring to madam Silvia;

Which, out of my neglect, was never done.

*Pro.* Where is that ring, boy?

*Jul.* Here 'tis; this is it.

[Gives a Ring.]

*Pro.* How! let me see!

Why this is the ring I gave to Julia.

*Jul.* Oh! cry your mercy; sir; I have mistook;  
This is the ring you sent to Silvia. [*Shews another Ring.*]

*Pro.* But how cam'st thou by this ring? at my depart  
I gave this unto Julia.

*Jul.* And Julia herself did give it me;  
And Julia herself hath brought it hither.

*Pro.* How! Julia?

*Jul.* Behold her that gave aim to all thy oaths,  
And entertain'd them deeply in her heart:

How oft hast thou with perjury cleft the root?

Oh, Protheus! let this habit make thee blush.

Be thou asham'd that I have took upon me

Such an immodest raiment; if shame live

In a disguise of love:

It is the lesser blot, modesty finds,

Women to change their shapes, than men their minds.

*Pro.* Than men their minds! 'tis true, oh heaven!  
were man

But constant he were perfect; that one error

Fills him with faults; makes him run through all sins:

Inconstancy falls off ere it begins:

What is in Silvia's face but I may spy

More fresh in Julia's with a constant eye?

*Val.* Come, come, a hand from either:

Let me be blest to make this happy close;

'Twere pity two such friends should long be foes.

*Pro.* Bear witness, heaven,

I have my wish for ever.

*Jul.* And I mine.

*Enter Outlaws, with Duke and THURIO.*

*Out.* A prize, a prize, a prize!

*Val.* Forbear, forbear, I say; it is my lord the duke.  
Your grace is welcome to a man disgrac'd,  
Banished Valentine.

*Duke.* Sir Valentine!

*Thu.* Yonder is Silvia; and Silvia's mine.

*Val.* Thurio, give back, or else embrace thy death;  
Come not within the measure of my wrath:

Do not name Silvia thine ; if once again,  
 Milan shall not behold thee. Here she stands,  
 Take but possession of her with a touch ;—  
 I dare thee but to breathe upon my love.

*Thu.* Sir Valentine, I care not for her, I ;  
 I hold him but a fool that will endanger  
 His body for a girl that loves him not :  
 I claim her not, and therefore she is thine.

*Duke.* The more degenerate and base art thou  
 To make such means for her as thou hast done,  
 And leave her on such slight conditions.—  
 Now, by the honour of my ancestry,  
 I do applaud thy spirit, Valentine,  
 And think thee worthy of an empress' love.  
 Know then, I here forget all former griefs,  
 Cancel all grudge, repeal thee home again.  
 Plead a new state in thy unrivall'd merit,  
 To which I thus subscribe—Sir Valentine,  
 Thou art a gentleman, and well deriv'd ;  
 Take thou thy Silvia, for thou hast deserv'd her.

*Val.* I thank your grace ; the gift hath made me  
 happy.

I now beseech you, for your daughter's sake,  
 To grant one boon that I shall ask of you.

*Duke.* I grant it for thine own, whate'er it be.

*Val.* These banish'd men, that I have kept withal,  
 Are men endu'd with worthy qualities ;  
 Forgive them what they have committed here,  
 And let them be recall'd from their exile :  
 They are reformed, civil, full of good,  
 And fit for great employment, worthy lord.

*Duke.* Thou hast prevail'd ; I pardon them and thee ;  
 Dispose of them as thou know'st their deserts.  
 Come, let us go ; we will include all jars  
 With triumphs, mirth, and rare solemnity.

*Val.* And, as we walk along, I dare be bold  
 With our discourse to make your grace to smile.  
 What think you of this page, my lord ?

*Duke.* I think the boy hath grace in him ; he blushes.

*Val.*

*Val.* I warrant you, my lord, more grace than boy.

*Duke.* What mean you by that saying?

*Val.* Please you, I'll tell you as we pass along,  
That you will wonder what hath fortun'd.—

Come, Protheus, 'tis your penance but to hear

The story of your loves discovered;

That done, our day of marriage shall be yours;

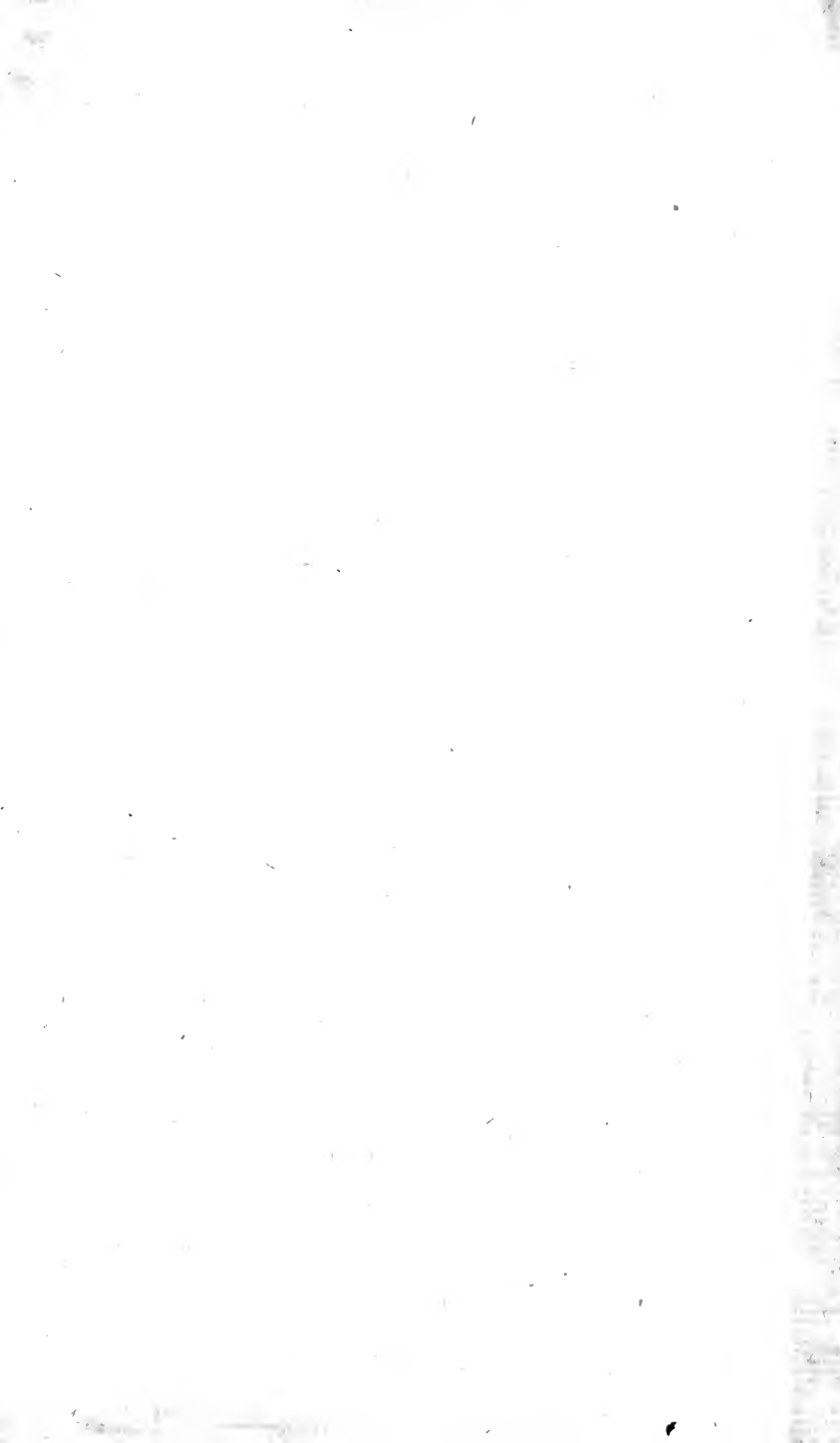
One feast, one house, one mutual happiness.

[*Exeunt omnes.*]

THE END.









K

1000

